



For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

Prologue

I sat at the corner row of the classroom side laughing at my English teacher.

"Xena, can you explain to the class what you're laughing at." and that was the one and only Mrs Fugate who always gets on my last nerve. I'm trying to have a good time here and she's busy asking what I'm laughing. Chill out old woman.

Me: umm ma'am. I was laughing... at your wig. Don't you have another one perhaps?

The class laughed, I could see she was furious but who cares? I don't care. I put my feet on the desk taking a bite from my apple

Mrs Fugate: Young lady I am not going to be disrespected by you. Detention for you.... In fact I'm dragging you to the principals office right now!

I mean, we both know I won't be expelled. My father donates thousands in this school thus they can't expel me. I have a big ego, I know

My name is Xena Kabelo Mlanjana. I am 18 years old currently doing my 12th grade. I describe myself as tomboyish that's because I get along with guys mostly. I'm not sure whether I qualify in the lesbian bracket yet coz believe it or not. As naughty as I am, the idea of dating scares the shit of me, I've never dated anyone but I have once kissed someone before, a girl but it was just a game (spin the bottle). I reside at Durban with both my parents and siblings, well sibling because I have one brother, Sizwe.

And this my story I hope you enjoy this journey. Did I say that right? Let's try again

I hope you have buckled up your seat belts coz my journey is a rollercoaster. Yep that sounds better!

1

A bell ringing violently rings waking me up from my nap.

Sir O'Brien: don't forget the homework, remember do not copy.

People are busy packing their school books in their bags as it is after-school.

Sir O'Brien: And please update Xena too because it seems as if she went to Lala land.

Class laughs, I roll my eyes in annoyance.

After long boring school hours, I also pack my books, no scratch that. I took my drawing exam pad, fold it then took my Nike bag and hit the road.

I have a squad, we call ourselves the COOL because we're the coolest group this school has ever had. Today only Aaron came, others have hangover. And Aaron forced himself because he has no choice, he's got strict parents. As for me the reason why I came to school today... Umm why did I come to school today? Okay let me say it's because I had to. I hate to admit that I also have strict parents. When I say strict I mean STRICT!

“X!” I looked to see who’s calling my name. Well that’s a short version of Xena.

Me: Ntwana!!! Njayam zikhiphani (boy, howzit)

We fist bump

Aaron: nothing much ntwan I just want to sleep.

I chuckled at that.

Aaron: it’s so nice to be you coz you don’t drink. So wish I was you right now

He yawned

Me: you’ll be fine man. You know you can quit drinking anytime moss.

Aaron: nope, I love alcohol and it loves me. See?

Me: wow says a person who has hang over.

Aaron: shut upppp

He hits my shoulder playfully then we walk to my house, we have this party planned out so we’re going to polish on how things are going to be done. It’s Thursday and my parents are leaving for some trip for the weekend which means party! When I get home there’s a car parked in the driveway.

I get inside

Me: Mom! Dad?!

Silence, most probably they are still at work. I walk up stairs to my room, Aaron gets in too then throws himself on my bed.

Me: GET off my bed man. Get off

Aaron: dude it's just a bed.

Me: yep and my bed at that so man get off it

Advertisement

sit at that couch.

He went to the couch. One more thing about me I'm a neat freak. I like my things to be kept in good condition. No one will just sit in my bed without my permission. No one at all. I put my bag on my study table as I video called the other guys to come to my crib too so we can finish this thing off.

"...make it fast we're waiting" I then dropped the call only to catch this idiot staring at me. See, Aaron is my best friend. We've been friends since I can remember. We do everything together and to catch him staring at me this weird like ... I can't find the right words to explain his stare. It's more like lust? No maybe I'm paranoid Aaron will never like me like that.

Me: stop

Aaron: what?

Me: the way you're looking at me. It's creepy

Aaron: you're beautiful you know that?

Me: yes boy I know. Please call Liam maybe he'll get through when you call him. I can't seem to reach him on my side

Aaron: sure

He dials something on his phone then a knock comes through.

I opened the door

Me: mom?

Mom: hey honey

She hands me a key, wait a car key!!! I scream to the top of my lungs running around.

At last mom bought me a car. I've long wanted a car. I can't believe this! This is crazy

I rush just to hug her then ran outside, it's VW polo , a red one at that. I opened it

Me: Aaron! Come let's take this baby for spin.

Mom: be safe Kabelo

Me: I will ma

Day of party

It's Friday my parents went out of the country and its lit, it's good. We're vibing, it's packed! The ladies are hot! Shuuuu! A girl with short skirt passes by and we all stare at her butt. It's so big, I wish I could grab it. So we're sitting at the couch, its Caleb, Liam, Aaron and me. My boys! Oh one more thing. These guys are all players when I say all... I mean all of them.

Liam: I am going to ask her number guys, she looks so good and blessed.

We watch him as he talks to her. We're waiting if he's gonna get the number and he does. I mean he's the biggest school player so it's so obvious. I don't get why girls always agree even though they know he has a girlfriend. Well temporary girlfriend. I wouldn't settle for that.

Caleb: X

Me: yeah?

Caleb: there this guy that has a big crush on you.

Me: who's that punk (I laugh) oh my goodness. People can be so unbelievable, tell him I'm not interested.

Caleb: ouch. I'll tell him.

I took a sip on my juice, I don't drink alcohol so I go with this.

Aaron: let's play truth or dare

Caleb: I'm in

—

For a minute something stole my concentration.

Me: is that Alex?

Caleb: whoooa she came?

Aaron: hey Alex! Come over here

She shyly walks towards us. I didn't think she'll make it here.

She's introverted and reserved.

Soon other girls also come so we can play. Honestly I don't like playing this game but anyway I'll play it just this once.

The game goes along till they reach me.

Liam : truth or dare

Me: truth

Liam : are you a lesbian?

Me: I was kidding. Dare

Caleb: that's not allowed.

Aaron: no leave her I know just a dare for her. I dare you to kiss Alex.

Ohhhh shit I'm doomed. See that's why I hate these games.

Caleb: she won't do it.

They all chuckled people waiting at me in anticipation. I licked my lips staring at Alex.

Liam: she won't do it guys.

It's their way of hyping me and it gets on my nerves. Alex looks nervous and her white skin suddenly gets pale, her cheeks turn red.

Me: come to papa

I say to her.

Alex: I don't want to kiss you.

Some girl: it's just a game Alex.

Me: you're ready?

Alex: fine

Me: I promise you won't regret it.

I come closer to her and she's standing right in front of me. I hold her waist her breathing increases as soon as I touched her skin. she tip toes then our lips lock. I close my eyes and

travelled my tongue in her mouth exploring her. My body is realising too much adrenaline and excitement. She lets out a moan then I groan softly

Aaron: okay that's enough

I softly bite her lower lip pulling out slowly then smirked at her taking my seat. Whoaà I feel so wet. So wish I can kiss her again

2

Alex: I'm done playing this game

The game continues without her. She thinks this game revolves around her. I mean we can carry on without her ... We play, crack jokes, they drink, smoke, play around with them girls and I'm thinking about her, Alex.

.
.br/>.

It's Monday, in the middle of November 2015.

I woke up after hearing a loud noise of people singing. It's way too much they gotta stop coz I can't deal with this. I walked down stairs to the lounge only to find mom and her "church friends" singing.

She usher's me to join in, it's not like I have a choice. See mom is a very religious person and sometimes she's way too much. Thinking about her finding out I went to a party and kissed a girl is some stress. I always try to be at my best behaviour.

We do the morning prayer with the fellows and a scripture is read, my mom read it

Mom: our scripture for today is taken from

Matthew 19:4-6

He answered, "Have you not read that he who created them from the beginning made them male and female, and said, 'Therefore a man shall leave his father and his mother and hold fast to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh'? So they are no longer two but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man separate." End of scripture.

So now I am going to outline what it really means

Fellows: mmmh

This scripture means that the Lord has created a man and a woman to love and marry each other and not woman and a woman. As you hear from the scripture, God abolishes lesbian people, gays and all of that. Anyone who does that is against the word of the Lord. I won't be long, that's the end of what I've prepared. Can we close our eyes and pray.

Okay I see what's happening here so mom thinks I'm into girls so she reads this. I mean why didn't they stay at that trip forever. They came back after two days, just two days!

After that I do my morning routine preparing for school. Then went downstairs and found my family at the dinner table.

Me: mornings mornings

Dad: good morning

Sizwe: morning Little sister

He says standing up then puts his bowl on the sink.

Sizwe: I'm off to work now.

Me: bye bro

I pour out corn flakes on a bowl then milk.

Mom: honey hurry up or you'll be late. Kabelo I'm sorry to leave you like this but me and your father are in hurry.

Me: it's cool.

Dad fixes his tie then puts both of their bowls on the sink then takes his brief case.

Dad: Bye Xena, hope you enjoy your day.

Me: thanks dad.

Mom takes her purse then hugs me and they are both out. So it's just me, I seat at the table and endeavoured on my food with my earphones on. I take my car keys once I finish then drove to Caleb's, Aaron

Liam house to pick them up so we can go to school. It's my first time driving this car to school. When I drive in, all eyes on us. I parked then me and my boys got out. The crowd still staring, people screaming and shouting my name. I brush my shoulder, the crowd went crazy then we walked slow motion in unison walking towards them. They opened the way for us as we made our way to class and oh I locked my car. The sound of locking clicks, just how I like it.

The school bell rings indicating assembly time and thus the school proceeds.

Class begins and as always I'm bored or making jokes and the the class loves it.

Soon it's break time and I went to our spot. So there are benches under this tree and they are limited edition. We own them no else but us the "COOL" chills there. Aaron joins us later on.

Me: hey man where have you been?

Aaron: around.

Liam: what do you mean "around"

Caleb: oh he means he was his new girlfriend. Am I right or am I right?

Aaron: shut up dude, first of in don't have a girlfriend.

We crack out of laughter then trouble seems coming our way. Franz, it's this squad of these cocky boring guys. They walk confidently towards us.

Me: what do you want Jayden.

Jay: This is our spot leave now!

Who do they think they are to come claiming our spot just like that.

I look at the guys for some signal to see if they are going to do some thing about this guy in front of us.

And these guys aren't showing any movement. So I have to handle this on my own.

Me: yeah right, you know what Jay you could help yourself and leave before I do anything to harm you.

Jay: you don't scare me.

Me: nci nci nci

Jay: I dare you to do something!

I stood up walked to him then stopped when i was one inch away.

Me: repeat that.

Jay: you don't scare me

Without a second thought I grabbed the hem of his jersey then punched his nose a crowd has now gathered. His legs are swinging in the air, I kick his stomach as he tries to hit my face. Then I throw him on the ground kicking him repeatedly. He's a boy, I'm a girl but he can't fight.

Me: you're a chicken. You know that ?

Crowd laughs then soon, the principal comes.

Principal: Xena, my office! Now!

Arghhh I dragged myself there. Sitting at a wooden chair in his office.

Principal: I will not tolerate such behaviour. I definitely won't tolerate this, you know what?

Me: you can't expel me you know it too.

Principal: yes but I can suspend you.

Me: what!!?

Principal: Xena, you aren't changing. I'm feed up with your behaviour and I'm calling your parents right now!

Me: please don't call them I promise I won't cause any trouble again.

Principal: you have to promise me that you won't.

Me: I promise sir. I promise

Principal: good, remember if you mess up again. Suspension for you.

Me: I won't cause any trouble I promise.

Principal: good. Now get out of my office before I change my mind.

I gladly do

The day continues, atleast I try to behave in class throughout.

It's now the end of a school day and I'm currently at the ladies toilets just trying to freshen up. I stare at myself at the mirror after washing my face. I need to stop being a trouble maker.

Like seriously, a door from one of the toilets opens and it's Alex. She darts her eyes around I guess she's shy then washes her hands. Not even greeting, okay. I'm gonna do that for her then

Me: hey there

Suprised, her cheeks turn red.

Alex: j..hgum

Me: huh?

She rubs her palms against each other looking down. Whoooa what's happening? I lift her chin up with my pointing finger

Me: look at me.

Alex: Ummm the kiss...

Me: please don't take that serious. It was just a game okay?

Alex: oh I thought that maybe... You know what. It doesn't matter.

She storms out of the bathroom and I'm like what just happened. Is it something I did or what.

Nevermind that

I drive alone to my house. The thing is, out of all subjects I do. I'm good at maths and so I offer extra classes on Mondays so I go home late than others. Which explains why my friends left me.

I drove out of school and on the way I saw Alex. I lowered the speed driving beside her.

Me: hey want a ride?

Alex: no thanks

Me: suit yourself... You know what?

Alex: what? (Annoyed)

Me: I think I regret kissing you. You're childish and annoying.

Alex: what?! You're crazy X! How dare you! How dare you!

Me: can you explain the attitude you're giving me now?

Alex: there are rumours that me and you are dating. You know that?

Me: yes and we're not dating, you're not my type and I'm not gay. Thus you and me will never never happen, is there a problem with that?

Alex: Go fuck yourself.

She then walks faster then crosses the street getting in some Peach house. Mxm I don't give a damn.

If she's gonna be some pussy then I don't care. I don't care about her I mean.

I don't ... care about... her. Right?

My phone rings and it's Aaron.

Me: what's up?

Aaron: Ummm There is something I wanna tell you. I'm at your house right now.

3

I get to my crib and found Aaron staring at the fridge. He takes a yoghurt then when he turns he choked, coughing out holding his neck.

Me: you got exactly what you deserve.

Aaron: dude you are such a freak!

Me: put my yoghurt down please.

Aaron: come on just two spoons.

Me: please Aaron let's not fight about this you know that is daily meal.

Aaron: you'll buy another one

I roll my eyes in annoyance then let him be coz I know Aaron like behaving like this like this is his home. Mom has accepted that too and somehow thinks we'll get together and get married. That's not happening thou.

Me: you wanted to talk to me. What's up?

Aaron: oh let me first finish eating this

He takes more spoons quickly, his mouth is in a bubble because of the hurried pace. Just seconds ago he said. Two spoons and now he's eating my entire yoghurt. Hai I give up

Me: suit yourself, you know where to find me.

I walked up stairs to my room. I could hear music on my brother's room booming, he came back early today. That's unusual

I knocked on his door

Advertisement

the door flies open.

Sizwe: what?

Me: can you keep it down.

Sizwe: ohh so I can hear you moan Aaron's name.

Me: shut upppp me and Aaron are friends so chill brother none of that is happening.

I rolled my eyes then something caught attention. He's got a stack of opened condoms on his dresser. Ohhh someone is getting laid today. I decide not to trigger that

Sizwe: he didn't tell you?

Me: about what?

Sizwe: nevermind, anyways sister I am busy with something we'll talk later.

He slabs the door on my face. Okay I could see Aaron walking up the steps and so I got in my room then he gets in too, sitting

on the couch quite it's like he's nervous. Boy why you tensing up ?

Aaron: X

Me: Aaron ?

Aaron: I wanted to say something quite special and unique. Ummm you know you're my best friend right?

Me: yeah

Aaron: umm promise me we'll be friends and you'll see me the same way after I tell you this.

Me: what is it? You're making me nervous tell me already

Aaron: umm it's been quite a while now feeling this way and I thought I should bring it off my chest. Please listen to me without interruption.

Me: okay

Aaron: X I think I'm in love with you and now it has come to a situation where I can't really control it. The love I have for you is unconditional

He walks up to me I sit up straight trying to process what he just told me.

Aaron: I know you love me too X. I know it, I can see the way you look at me, the way you flirt with me.

Me: what are talking about?

He's an inch away from my face

Aaron: I know you want me too X I know it.

He takes out condoms

Me: you are crazy

Aaron: I'm crazy for you X

I noticed that these are the condoms in Sizwe's room fuck they are so nasty. Aaron thinks I am in love with him? And at that I wouldn't be losing my virginity like this. I mean he just confessed his love for me now and all he wants is sex!

Me: get out!

Aaron: don't fight this I know you love me.

I pushed him he fell hard on the floor.

Me: get out of my house Aaron. I don't wanna see you or talk to you get out.

I kicked him repeatedly then dragged him by his leg out of my room, slapping my door when I got in my room. Wow just a wow.

4

Following day, Tuesday in the middle of November 2015

It's a new day, I woke up to complete silence. No church friends today yeyyyy time for celebration. It's not like I hate church. I don't hate it. I don't love it. I'm just in the middle. I do my morning routine and put my hair in a ponytail, dannnng I need a new hair cut. This hair is nasty like it ain't really that appealing now. Anyways when I finished with my business I went downstairs for breakfast and no one is at the dinner table. I looked at the clock and noticed it's 7 o'clock I'm late, the school starts at 07:30 and I'm still here. I took a banana then rash to my car. My phone starts ringing none stop, it's the boys.

I pick each of them up driving like a mianic at last we're at school. And they are closing the gate! Shit

Principal: The COOL you're all late.

Liam: please forgive us sir please

Caleb: the tyre had a problem sir and ...

Principal: save your lame excuses. Detention for you

Me: (mumbling) you're a happiness wrecker

Principal: what did you say young lady?

Me: I said okay sir we hear you.

Principal: mmmmmh get inside this instant.

I parked the car then we went to the assembly. All eyes on us, these kids like to be staring. I made sure I'm walking extra slow with a swang walk. I could see people whispering staring at us. Okay enough about that

It's class time

Mrs Fugate: alright class I believe you did the homework so I'll be checking your books

Me: homework?

Mrs Fugate: yes Mrs Mlanjana

Me: it's X ma'am

Mrs Fugate: lets start with you. Where is your homework?

Shit I didn't do it. See I don't understand why they give us homework I mean I get what she said moss so

Me: um ma'am

Caleb: there wasn't any homework ma'am I think you're getting old

Liam: yeah ma'am. Does the class agree?

Class: yess

Mrs Fugate: heeey I know I gave you homework.

Aaron: yes ma'am you did. I did mine

We look at him like dude what are you doing?

He simply shrung and shows ma'am the homework.

Mrs Fugate: good boy. You know what this means? Everyone who didn't do it go outside.

The whole class expect three kids including Aaron went out.
He's such a traitor

Break

We're sitting at our spot, Aaron isn't with us and we're currently discussing him.

Me: know what let's just drop this conversation guys Aaron is being a jerk right now and it's just that. Let's just drop it.

Liam: you right

Caleb: so we're going on another party this Friday.

Me: where?

Calebs girlfriend, Linda came to us

Linda: hey guys

Us: hi

Linda: hey baby

She smooches him then sits on his lap.

Me: so where is this party taking place?

Liam: at your house. I mean your parents are going away again
moss

Me: I don't think it's a good idea. My parents guys oh wait...
They are going away this weekend so ...

Caleb: that's my man

We make a happy dance expect Caleb coz his lap us occupied
by some thick booty. Shuuuu!

Me: I gotta go buy some snacks for everyone so money please.

I took out my R 10 they gave theirs also and so when I was on
my way someone called out my name. Aaron. Argh this guy is a
jerk

Me: what?

Aaron: have you thought about what I told you?

Me: there's nothing to think here. Aaron I don't love you the same way. You are like family to me.

Aaron: please consider seeing me as a boyfriend.

Me: that won't happen. Aaron I love you as brother and that is it.

Aaron: you don't love me

Me: I do love you but ...

"Wow" I looked at who was talking. Linda. What is she doing here?

Linda: this is what you do to my friend? Huh Xena? You guys are dating and

Me: whoa who told you that.

Linda: I saw you guys at the bathroom

Me: the fuck. Did you ask her if we're dating?

Linda: stop pretending X. Alex was crying yesterday and when I asked her all she could utter was your name. Girl you should go apologize coz my girl isn't feeling okay because of you. By the way I should get going

She walked towards the shop

Aaron: so you're really with her? You chose her over me. That "dare" led you to her. We've been friends since we were in our

diapers and you wanna throw away that friendship so some skunk, some cheap girl c-

Me: she's not a cheap girl!

Aaron: whatever. You know what... Until you agree to be my girlfriend then that's when I will consider you a friend and go back to that The COOL group of yours. (He slightly laughs) to think that I even joined that to please you. This is a thank you I get? Girl you gotta make up your mind coz nci nci nci if you don't. Hell is gonna break lose

you'll see my true colours.

And with just that he left and went to The Franz, the group I just fought with yesterday. Wow just a wow

It's after school, I'm chilling at the park alone. Just to process everything that happened. So I lost my best friend because I don't love him the way he does. Why do people act nasty when you reject their love? It's not like I'm going to love everyone. Plus I don't date. People in relationships have sex and I'm not ready for that. Girls be telling stories of how their boyfriends wanna leave them because they don't get any sex. Or they feel like they should give them the cookie to make them stay. I'm not ready for that. And they say breaking virginity hurts a lot. That's what I also don't understand. If having sex for the first

time hurts. Then why...why have it. Guys it's really simple, don't do something that hurts you. I won't have a boyfriend or "girlfriend" till I'm at least 21. Coz at that age I'll be matured and ready, you feel me.

I notice Alex walking with Linda. I think this is my cue to talk to her.

I walked up to them

Me: hey guys

She gives me that nasty look.

Me: Alex can I talk to you?

Alex: why?

Me: um I just want to talk to you in private.

Linda: whatever you say, you can say it in front of me.

Alex: no friend. We can talk in private X

Alright,

Me: after you

She led the way as we walked to my car. I opened the passenger door for her and Linda is there looking a sorts of nasty even sulking. What's wrong with her?

I got on my side. Then got down to business

Me: um First I'd like to say thank you for letting me talk to you.

Alex: get down to the point X

I cleared my throat

Me: okay I'm sorry for the words I said yesterday. I really shouldn't have put it like that. I hope you find it in your heart to forgive this soul next to you.

She looks at me for sometime

Me: what?

Alex: is that all?

Me: what?

Alex: there isn't any other thing you want to say?

Me: umm am I forgiven?

Alex: so there isn't any. I let my hopes up high (she mumbles)

Me: what?

Alex: I forgive you X because it's you.

Me: I'll make it up to you.

I started the car.

Alex: where are we going?

Me: Gateway we'll be playing games baby.

Alex: wait Linda...

Me: she has legs and knows where her home is.

Alex: X

The way she says my name is so sexy, sending shivers down my spine.

Me: anyways I am inviting you to a house party that will take place at my house. You're in?

Alex: ummm I'm not sure X

There it goes again. My name, the way she says it

Me: please think about it. You came last time

Alex: because Linda dragged me there.

Me: oh okay

Alex: I still have to think about it X I'm not sure if I'll be available with the test coming and stuff. I wanna make sure I nail it

Oh I forgot to mention she's an A student

Me: take your time I won't put pressure on you

I parked at the beach.

Alex: wait didn't you say we are going at Gate way?

Me: change of plans baby

She blushes

I took off my T-shirt and trouser only left with my briefings. She closed her eyes, shy I guess

Alex: no we are not going to...what are you doing? X I'm still a virgin and...sex is ...

Me: wait who said anything about sex? Girl were going to swim take off your clothes.

5

So she looks at me with questioning eyes.

Me: what?

Alex: turn around, I won't take off my clothes with you staring.

Me: okay girl whatever

I close my eyes as she takes off her clothes. She takes her time and I wait patiently for her.

Alex: done but don't open just yet. Can I maybe take your t-shirt.

I'm figuring she's not feeling comfortable with wearing just a bra and panty

Me: sure

After some time

Alex: done

I open my eyes and take a stare at her, damn she's thick! She has... Wow I wish I could have her now as in like. In bed. Wait what are thinking X this is your school mate. Yeah that's what she is.

Alex: what?

She covers her thighs

Me: no don't, don't cover up for me. Don't you ever do that when I'm with you

Did I say that out loud

Alex: what do you mean? You were literally staring at me like something is wrong. I know that my body ain't that nice like the girls you fucking with. And X I just don't feel... Comfa..table. I'm fat kinda and not as pretty, nicely made as the other girls

Me: Alex... You are beautiful. I mean look at you. You slick! Like you're thick and a beautiful brown skin girl. Why would you think that about your body

I stared at her thighs one more time.

Me: look at that!

Somehow I get this foreign feeling of excitement. That's how I can describe it. I've never felt like this in my life.

Alex: why you staring at me this long thou

I lost control over myself I didn't realize I stared this long.

Me: umm we can now go. I guess and wait just like that. I'm gonna open the door for you

Alex: aww

I opened the passenger door then we went for a swim. It's empty here and around 16:00 that's why.

Me: jump !

A wave hit through our bodies, we jump hand in hand

Alex: another one is coming embrace yourself X

We jump in unison.

After an amazing time at the beach we went to the nearest games. We went for the cars

So we're driving together

Alex: turn left

"Gquzuuuuuu" we hit another car then burst out laughing.

Alex: let me take the wheel.

Me: no

Alex: you're annoying

Me: I know

Alex: you got a big ego. You know that

Me: "got a big ego

got a big ego"

I sang Beyonce's song

Me: I know baby

She hit my arm playfully

Alex: you're annoying

I chuckled

We played many more games and having a good time. I feel like this girl is somewhat a part of me. But I won't go deep on that.

We're now sitting on the top of my car watching the sunset. I mean sitting in the car would be weird right? So the top is better to get a good view.

Waves hitting the big ocean stones. Breath taking view in front of us and we're chilling. Talking, making jokes

Alex: you're so cool, and I'm sure you know it.

Me: I am ?

Alex: yeah... I thought you gonna rub it on my face or something.

Me: I guess you thought wrong. You're cool too you know.

Alex: me? I'm boring.

Me: yeah that's true

Alex: shut up (she hit my arm playfully)

Me: I'm joking jeez woman...ouch. your fist really hurts.

Alex: you deserve it.

Me: you trippin . Anyways where you're from. Your accent is quite different but attractive.

Alex: I'm from Kenya originally. I and my parents moved here five years back then I started with high school here.

Me: that's interesting. That also explains your skin colour

Alex: yeah. I get teased a lot about this skin.

Me: why?

Alex: because I'm too black. I'm referred to as "ikwere kwere" you know stuff like that. It cuts like deeply.

Me: but you're beautiful, just don't give them the attention they want. Ignore them

Alex: it's not as easy as you say it X. People at school are nasty maybe you don't notice that since you live this glamorous life. You are perfect. You get any girl you want. You are filthy rich. You and your friends go fucking anyone and then there is me. The girl that isn't noticed by her crush for years. Four straight years she doesn't notice me. You know how that feels? To be in

love and you just lose hope that you'll ever be with them? You know that?

Me: uhm no

Alex: yeah right you wouldn't know. As I said your life is a like fairy tale.

Me: dude you don't know what you're talking about ! You think that my life is a glamour? Alex have you ever know how it feels like to wake up every day not knowing whether you are attracted to girls or to boys. Have you ever been watched 24/7 by your school mates waiting for your next move because you're famous, sorry for sounding cocky. Dude my parents are controlling as fuck! And you don't know that! Alex I just lost my best friend today and you see me as this perfect person with a "glamorous life". Yes I admit I am rich but that's my parents money. You know what? I'm driving you to your house right now and I'm feed up. Get in the car

The drive back is filled with silence as I drive Alex is silently crying. Why is she crying. She's a such a cry baby and that annoys the fuck out of me. If we're gonna be dating ... we'll if that happens. She better act matured I mean... Okay I'm done talking.

I park on her drive way then opened the door for her.

Alex: I'm sorry X

Me: get inside I wanna make sure you're safe

Alex: Kabelo please

She knows my second name.

Me: get inside Alex.

There are people singing like they are drunk inside her house like it's some party. A child around five years comes out with a plate then eats pap with water I think then sits on a bench in the verander. What is going on in there? Well that's not my problem thou. She gets inside the child runs to her she kisses her face then the kid wipes her tears.

I get in my car then drove home

I got back late, so my mom is gonna be on my throat and it's 21:00 Fam please pray for me, today I'm gonna be killed like literally

6

The lights are off. Everyone in the house is probably sleeping by this time. I'm in trouble. I'm in deep shit rn. I parked my car outside the garage then took the ladder, climbed up to my window. I get in at last phewwwwww! Right then the lights went on.

Mom is with a shambok. Yeah whenever I mess up she beats me up with that, here goes nothing.

Mom: where have you been?

Me: I was ... helping a friend out ma.

Mom: which friend coz even your best friend, Aaron didn't know your whereabouts.

Me: I mean my other f..rien..d ma. Caleb.

Mom: I told you to stop hanging out with those boys. You don't listen Kabelo. What is happening with you

She attacks me with the shambok, I try to run to the door but it's locked. She beats me up like no body's business. I'm trying my best not to cry. Every time the shambok hits my skin, a red mark is left.

I can't wait to go to varsity next year then get away from them.
This is torture

When she's done

Mom: you disgust me nxxx

The door is banged as she exits. I slid in my blankets crying myself to sleep. My body is so sore I can't even move. If I wasn't black or something I'd go and report this coz this isn't a way to punish someone.

I doze in my thoughts.

I woke up the following day and went straight down stairs coz I'm really hungry. It's super early around four am . And so I took my leftovers from yesterday and ate. Right then my brother Sizwe decides to disturb my peace.

Me: you're creepy

Sizwe: morning to you too lil sister.

Me: mxm

Sizwe: what? | He said opening the cupboard taking out a cup

Me: yesterday you know. Why did you help Aaron out? Why did you give him condoms Sizwe?

Sizwe: because he asked for them. I'm just looking out for you. I don't want you to get pregnant. I'm cool with you dating him but pregnancy really isn't in our vocabulary.

Me: Sizwe I will never get together with Aaron okay.

Sizwe: why? You've know him for decades, for a life time to be exact. Why don't you like him? He's more like family

Me: exactly. He's more like family as you say. He's like a brother to me so I don't like him that way. But there is someone I'm interested in right now. I'm not sure if she's feeling me too.

Sizwe: it's a she?

Me: yeah

Sizwe: I always knew you were different. You're into girls?

Me: I'm not sure yet. Mom is against the idea of lesbians and that's gonna be trouble.

Sizwe: you can say that again.

He poured coffee from the coffee making machine.

Sizwe: so what will happen with your relationship with Aaron?

Me: I guess we will stop being friends. He made that clear to me today, you can't believe what he did bro. This nigga has been my best friend for years and he just dropped our special friendship just like that.

Sizwe: just leave him. He's not worth it.

Me: you're right

Sizwe: So today he came by to see you. I really didn't know what's going on between you two but I could sense the jealousy when he told mom about this girl you were with. What's her name again... Alex I think.

Me: ohh that. How did he know that?

Sizwe: apparently he saw you guys at the park.

Me: oh

Sizwe: so this girl is Alex? That's her name?

My lips curl to a smile

Me: yes bro. I'm feeling her like I'm really into her

Sizwe: look you know I want the best for you but your relationship with her is not gonna work out. Coz of mom and dad but especially mom. I have no problem with you being gay, I mean you've grown in front of me and I saw from the very beginning that you aren't an ordinary girl. You are a special and unique child that may "May" like girls. I'm only 25 and I'm no expert or what. But (taking a sip) your journey to exploring this puppy love you have will be tough. You know what let me go take a shower

He leaves me just like that. This is really gonna be one tough road.

Following day, it's Wednesday, 11 November 2015

I'm at school, it's break time and me and boys are walking to our spot. The benches that is... Caleb is with his girlfriend, Linda which makes the four of us. When we got there Franz is at our spot.

Liam: I see you're looking for trouble huh?

Jay: I guess.

Me: Jayden

Aaron who ever the boss is please move out of our spot.

Jay: we run this school. We set the rules, you ain't gonna tell us what to do.

Me: congratulations Jay now get out of our spot.

Aaron: we won't

Caleb: hey traitor get off this instance!

Me: boys do your thing.

Linda: yes baby show him what you got.

They seem a little afraid but since there is a little crowd formed they tried their best shame and fought them for a short time till they surrender then leaves us in peace.

Aaron: you'll pay for this Kabelo!

Me: bring it on Aaron. I'm not scared of you.

With that being said. They left

We sat down at the benches

Linda: great job baby

She pecks his lips then they end up smooching.

Me: get a room

Liam: I second that.

I saw Alex approaching us

Liam: here comes someone's girlfriend.

Linda pulls out of the kiss

Linda: she's not her girlfriend. They aren't even dating

Me: did you have to speak?

Linda: yes

Me: fuck you

Linda: baby did you hear her? She said fuck me

Wow Linda is such a drama queen.

Caleb: yeah I'll do it just now

Me: ewww

Linda giggle staring at me with some eyes that say otherwise.
It's like she's drowsy or something

Alex: hello

Liam: hey there black girl

Alex: umm can I talk to X?

Liam: no X doesn't talk to black chicks. She's white as you can see.

Me: Liam please stop this nonsense. When I'm around don't be calling her all sorts of names. Are we clear?

Liam: so it's true? You're dating the blackest girl in school.

Me: you forgot to add "beautiful" girl in school. Now if you'll excuse me.

I pulled her hand then we went to an empty class. I sat on the desk and took out a brush for my shoes, I like them shiny so I carry this brush with me all the time.

Me: so what did you want to say to me.

Alex: umm X about yesterday. I should've acted appropriate and not as I did. I didn't know that you were going through some of that. I'm really sorry X.

Me: you didn't know ... I hear you but don't do the mistake of judging a book by its cover again. I won't forgive if you do it again.

She attacks me with a hug. I hug her back, I'm not a touchy person, like I don't give out hugs and kisses, like cheek kisses and stuff but this time around. I feel home, her arms are comfortating and somehow connect me to her more. I feel closer to her somehow. I'm not sure if y'all can understand but she makes me weak, my legs are failing me.

She pulls out soon as she started.

Alex: I'm sorry about hugg-

Me: its okay, see (I hug again)

That feeling again.

Alex: thanks standing up for me.

Me: anything for you

When I pull out, I automatically lean in for a kiss then our lips lock. Again. I'm going with the flow, I'm hyped up. Feeling wet like ...(whispering) down there. I brush lower my hand to her waist down to her booty then squeeze it a little. She lets out a moan, while she's rubbing on my back making. I kiss her neck slowly then let out a warm breath on her neck making traces

Alex: ohm yesses X

I groan as she strokes my hair, dipping a hand on my scalp
brushing it softly

"What's happening here?" I jump of her looking at the door
stands the one and only principal of this school. Mr Mugaberi

8

Principal: Xena Kabelo Mlanjana caught red handed going against school rules. You two follow me

I bite my lower lip in frustration.

Alex: we're in trouble X

Me: don't panic baby just chill okay.

Alex: I'm trouble (tears steam on her eyes)

Me: hey don't cry I'll get you out of this.

We enter the office then sit opposite to the principal.

Principal: I'll call both of you parents to come here this instant

And he does that

Advertisement

okay Fam I'm in deep shit! My parents will fly here in seconds.

Me: sir please don't cal-

Principal: Yes... I have your daughter her in front of me... I caught her kissing some black ugly girl in a classroom. Can you believe it? You must come right now.

"Black ugly girl"? What kind of adult is this?

Me: excuse me sir. She has a name and it's Alex

Principal: oh ... What's your parents number black girl.

Me: sir that's unacceptable.

Alex: it's fine X I go through this all the time.

Me: fine? This old grey headed man just called you "ugly" and you'll settle for that?

Alex: Kabelo please.

Principal: the number?

Alex: my parents prolly won't be available right now coz they are at work.

Principal: well they'll come here for you then because you two are suspended for a day.

Me: sir please can you give her suspension to me because she's innocent. I initiated the kiss. She wasn't aware plus this is Alex's first case so please sir.

Principal: you're taking fault for this girl?

Me: yes

Principal: okay two day suspension for you

Alex seems to be at the edge of crying again

Alex: no don't worry about me. I deserve it

Me: no you don't

Principal: young Alex you heard it for yourself. Xena takes fault for you now get out of my office.

She looks at me teary then exits right when both my parents come in.

Mom: Kabelo what have you done?!

Principal: please take a seat Mr and Mrs Mlanjana.

My father gave a disgusting glare.

8

Principal: I'm sure you know why you are here.

Dad: yes

Principal: your daughter was found kissing another girl in the school grounds which is something against the school conduct.

Does he have to repeat that. What was the purpose of him asking if they know why they are here if he's gonna be repeating. Mxm I rolled my eyes

Mom: Kabelo is this true?

I keep quiet

Mom: Kabelo I'm talking to you.

Still I don't dare utter a word.

Principal: yes she did. I'm sure you're both aware that this kid is troublesome. She's been giving us trouble throughout the year especially towards the end. It's like she is seeing herself as an adult now that there's only a few weeks left till she finishes school. I tell you, this one won't make it in life.

Me: excuse me? Don't you dare talk that rubbish. Who ...gives you...the authority to detect my life! Are you God?

Mom: Kabelo your tone.

Me: he must watch his words too. Mama you're gonna allow this pussy to detect my life?

Principal: enough!!! It's a matter of seconds I expel this rascal. Take him ...her whatever gender this piece of trash is out of my face. Mlanjana family you gotta discipline this kid.

Mom: we will try our best sir.

Dad: we're sorry. And sir I'd like to remind you. If you expel her now... We're taking out the funding.

Principal: I'm not expelling her. She's in matric so that's not possible. At least she passes Mathematics with 90s which will boost this school to be in newspapers and magazines.

Mom: yeah she's good with numbers.

Dad: she inherited that from me.

Me: are we done?

Dad: oh I think so. Principal we will try to make sure she doesn't cause trouble again.

Mom flashes a smile. I make the grumpiest face annoyed by them trying to please. Once we're outside the office

Mom: Kabelo what was that? Did you think about our reputation before making a decision of kissing some girls.

Dad: wifie can we at least talk to her when we're home. We don't want to be drawing to much attention. I am a pastor remember? A newly appointed one at that so please let's be civilised.

We walk to their car. At least people are in classes so I don't draw attention. Mom drives my car while I am in dad's car.

On the way it's silent at first, dad seems really disappointed.

Dad: X what made you do it?

Me: what dad?

Dad: you know that I love you right. You're my little girl and you know when you go against the school rules my heart is broken.

Me: I'm sorry dad. I wasn't thinking.

Dad: you know Exodus 20: 12 says "Honor your father and your mother, so that you may live long in the land the LORD your God is giving you." You know the principal is your father too and you swore at him. You used words we didn't teach you. Why?

Y'all my dad is that kinda of a cool dad. Yes he is also religious but he also considers the fact that times change. Yes the Bible says some stuff but he also considers the fact that God say "come as you are" okay I'm no priest or what. It's just that

growing up from a very religious family you also tend to know this phrases by heart. And now he's upset. Yes I feel bad. I feel bad for swearing at the principal but shame ... He deserves it. Period and I'm not apologizing to him as in forever. He should be the one apologizing to me. I'm sure y'all with me on that one. Right Fam?

Me: I won't do it again dad I'm sorry.

Dad: good girl.

I roll my eyes.

Dad: you understand the consequences of your actions. You will be grounded which means no phone for a week. Now give me your phone I know you have it with you even though the school conduct says no phones allowed.

I take it out then give him.

Dad: when we get home, you give me your IPOD

your laptop. I'm taking that FIFA game of yours

Me: dad please please don't take FIFA please I beg you.

Dad: I'm sorry kid you went very far this time around

Dad: lastly, you aren't allowed to go anywhere. I will pick you up everyday. Are we clear?

Me: (mumbling) fine

Dad: I didn't hear that.

Me: fine dad

Dad: good girl

He parked at the driveway

Dad: I'm dropping you off here coz I have to go back to work.
You know Doctors are always needed.

Me: sharp

Dad: fist bump

We did the fist bump

Dad: when I come back you'll tell me about this girl

And he was serious. I'm scared but I don't show it

I got out then open the gate for mom, she drives in my car then comes out.

Mom: Kabelo yiza (come)

Let me explain something quick. My father is Dutch/Afrikaans speaking person, he's 50 years old. I know he's old and mom is a Xhosa woman like a real Xhosa woman from Transkei she's 40 years old. Don't ask me about the gap. She's a lecturer at UKZN

and yep that's it...wait did I add the being "strict" part. Oh yea I did.

Mom: vala umnyango (close the door)

Me: mama please.

Mom: yeeeeeyyy I said close that door.

I close the door while she walks out of site.

Phew I thought she was going to beat me with her shoe or something. I take my yoghurt then start eating. Mom didn't beat me up. I'm so lucky... Wait... That song! "Love on top by Beyonce" I increased the volume on the radio

Me: baby you put my love on top top top top!!!

"Kabelo!!! "

Me:ma!

Mom: yizapha! (Come here)

Yerr when she says my name with that tone. I'm dead meat I tip toed just to check the mood. I peeked at the door and she had the shambok, a belt and wet towel on the bed. Shit! My reflection is on the mirror.

Mom: yeyyyy come inside.

Me? Come inside? No sorry mom I'll pass.

She takes the shambok and runs after me. I ran faster then fell hard on the ground. I could see her coming close to me... Shit I got up she grabbed me I pushed her pulling myself free successfully. I ran out of the gate. I don't know where I'm even going dude like... I go to Liam's house.

Knocked hard at the door

"I'm coming" I breath out through my mouth waiting. The door swings open. Liam's brother Sipiwo opens

Phiwo: X?

Me: hey

Phiwo: let me guess. You ran away coz your mom was going to spank you?

Me: you know me. Just let me in bro

I got in threw myself at the couch. This is like my third home. Second home was Aaron's.

Phiwo sits in the couch then plays FIFA.

Me: dude can I play with you

Phiwo: cool.

Phiwo: what did you do this time?

Me: it's limited edition so I can't tell you

Phiwo: owk

We play for hours till Liam comes back from school.

Liam: I didn't know we have a visitor.

Me: hey bro

Liam: what happened to you. Your phone is going through voicemail.

Me: I'm suspended....Dude!!! Why did you...

GAME OVER is displayed.

Phiwo: I won I won I won

Me: you won't win the second round plus you cheated!

Phiwo: how? I won I won

He makes a victory dance.

Me: ohh um Liam mom kinda kicked me out so I'm spending the night here.

Liam: okay cool but make sure mom doesn't see you coz you know the relationship between her and studs like you

Me: I'm not a stud. I'm straight. I like guys

The room is filled with laughter. Even I laughed at my joke.

Liam: that was a good one. Let me play too

We exchange with playing the game then later on we cook together. Liams not back yet and once she's back I'll have to hide coz ... Yeah you already know the Reason.

I slept on the couch on his room... I'm in deep thoughts and what I'm thinking about is her. Alex.

How she kissed me. The way her lips wee so soft. The way she caressed my hair. Mmmmmh I dig her straight! Okay let me be honest with myself. I Xena Kabelo Mlanjana is in love with Alex and I am a lesbian.

PERIOD!

10

Its yet another day, I'm not ready to face this day like... it's hectic. I'm afraid to go back home like really. But here goes nothing

When Liam's mother is gone I also make my way out, tried to be brave. I pass the security at our gate. Rang the door bell and waited in anticipation. I'm scared Fam. I'm really scared. The door opens and Sizwe is already dressed up ready for work

Sizwe: where have you been?

Me: at a friend's house

I got in

Sizwe: mom and dad are at the police station

Me: for what?

Sizwe: filing for a missing person, which is you stupid.

Me: yah neh.

Sizwe: you are trouble KB, let me update the rents.

He made a phone call while I'm opening the cupboards trying to look for something nice to eat before I'm officially kicked out. I took out creamy cheddar chips, Romany creams, took some tea bags and coffee packed all those in a bag then took my vanilla yoghurt.

Sizwe: ...sure.

Call ended

Sizwe: what are you doing?

I'm currently drinking one litre milk bottle trying to be full as fast as I can.

Me: I'm eating

Sizwe: mom and dad are coming.

Me: shit! Tell them I went to the shop.

I ran to my room and locked the door walked to my ensuite with my snacks and started eating.

I think I sat there for like an hour. Till I heard the door being opened. I forgot they have the master key. Yesess the door to the ensuite is opened and I'm licking the chocolate in the biscuits. You know Romany creams have that cream moss.

Mom: Kabelo where are you coming from?

Me: mom I'm really sorry.

Mom: you know what. I give up. I will leave you do what you want Kabelo I've had enough of you. Nxx

She leaves me like that. Wow so mother is giving up on me. Just like that... I feel so bad. Honestly I hate this. After she left I take a shower then go down stairs only to find her working at the

kitchen. Super awkward. I wanted to make myself something to eat.

Me: hi

Silence

I walk to the cupboard and took all bran and milk

Advertisement

made myself food then went up stairs with my food. I got to my study desk and tried reading my notes. That's how bored I was

I don't like reading like at all. From time to time I'd go and make myself food. Mom wasn't at the kitchen anymore so it's pretty chilled. I did most of my school work. Like previous homeworks and stuff. Honestly I've been missing out on a lot of stuff but I pass not that good just average. But from the period October, November I see a tutor who helps me with some stuff to up my grades. It's just an hour then she's gone. It's usually after 9 on Tuesdays, she's a teacher at this other school... The idea of that came from my parents since they want me to be a doctor. See my mom wanted to be a doctor too neh but situation couldn't let her. So she wants me to be a doctor but I want to be a musician, anything that involves creativity and being artistic. You feel me, but because they are my parents... And this means a lot to them. I'm already provisionally accepted at WITs so it's final.

On all the wrongs that I did. This can be a way of making them happy and proud about me. Not always being the disrespectful child that I am

It's Friday. The day of the party, I don't know how but I know that I am going. I took out an outfit for the night then did a new haircut with my machine. I look good I must say.

Around 19:00 I go eat dinner with family and the girl is in her gown while wearing her outfit for the party underneath.

Dad: so X tell us more about this girl.

Me: huh?

Dad: the girl you kissed.

Me: honestly dad I was just giving her a goodbye kiss since it's my friend.

Dad: oh

Me: the "no kissing" rule slipped of my mind. Like completely I personally see nothing wrong with pecking your friends cheek. I mean people do that all the time at church why not me. Okay I have an answer to that one. Because at school no kissing of any form is allowed.

Mom: mmmh who is this girl. Can we see her?

Me: sure I'll bring her home some day but I'll have to ask her first. I'm not sure if she'll agree. She's reserved and shy

Mom: sounds like she's sweet.

Me: yeah (I wasn't aware of what I was saying here) you'll love her the way I love her.

Mom: huh?

Me: oh I mean she's sweet.

Mom: oh

We continue eating then the fam went to sleep. I also pretended to be asleep till ninish then I put pillows under the blanket. Then went out using the window yep I successfully went out. And I'm at Liam's house

Well thing is my parents decided to cancel their trip to watch me closely you see. I met my boys! It's packed! Them girls be wearing short skirts like...!!!

Liam: dude Alex has been asking you.

Me: oh did you tell her I don't have a phone at the moment?

Liam: yeah but she's worried about you man. She's been asking me everyday she even asked for your parents number bro

Me: you didn't give her right. I'd be in trouble for that!

Liam: are you hiding her or something? She's your girlfriend
moss?

Me: no but I mean

Caleb: she's hiding her. (He took a sip from his beer)

Me: I'm not! We're not official yet. I'm not sure if she's feeling
me. I'm planning to tell her today, is she coming?

Caleb: yep she's definitely coming and I'm sure she wants to see
you.

Me: you think so

Liam: and speak of the devil.

I looked at the entrance. Damn! She's slick! She's wearing a
denim short and a shirt. That's an amazing look she's killing it.

Caleb: X

Liam: whipped !

Me: eish I'm coming back guys. I have to take care of
something

I walked behind her as she sat at the bar

Me: boo!

The beer on her hand split on her shirt. My bad

Me: I'm sorry

Alex: what the...

She turned only to found out it's me.

Lex: you'll pay for this.

Me: I'm sorry Lex I didn't think that...

Lex: forget it. You're annoying X.

Me: I think I can borrow you my vest if thats okay.

Lex: okay give me.

Me: I'll have to take it off somewhere. Let's go to the bedroom.

I pulled her hand and the boys were hyping me up. I must admit I'm blushing rn.

When I got in I took off my hoodie my t- shirt then vest leaving my sports bra only. I handed her the vest

She is blushing like red cheeks sweaty face. I licked my lips

Me: you're okay?

Lex: um yeah. (Clears throat) can you close your eyes I wanna get dressed.

Me: okay

I closed my eyes and peeked a little. I close and open my eyes slightly while she takes her time.

Lex: done.

Me: damn you look good.

Lex: thanks (blushes) and also thank you for standing up for me that day it really means a lot.

Me: it's nothing. I got you in trouble so that's only being fair.

Lex: how are you? Like did you get in trouble? Me: no my parents are chilled. I didn't get in any trouble chill.

I licked my lips

Lex: okay

I licked my lips

Lex: um I think we should go...

Me: no don't (I think grabbed her hand to harsh she bumped on my chest from there our lips too close to touch. I close the gap and kissed her again. She pulled out

Me: what?

Lex: umm I shouldn't be doing this with you X. I mean your girlfriend and

Me: baby it's only you.

I pecked her lips then she went for a deep kiss I pinned her on the wall kissing her deep my hand travels down her stomach then kiss her ear lobe she moans softly breathing heavy

Lex: X

I lift her up then put her on the hair dresser planting wet kisses on her neck. I pull out then breath on her neck slowly breathing warm air she vibrates a little

Lex: yess X fuck!

I rub her back, her breathing increases y'all like... I press on her butt repeatedly squeezing it as I groan

Lex: mmmh

She moans like she's crying.

Lex: fuck me!

What?

I continue regardless I don't know where this is going but I don't wanna rush into anything.

After pecking her lips one more time. I pull out and her eyes are red and small. I kiss her neck once again breathing warm air making traces with my lip then smoothly bite her leaving a love bite . She shakes a little wrapping her legs on my waist and I chuckled pulling out.

Lex: please fuck me X. You can't leave me hanging

Me: I'm not going to fuck you

Lex: oh

Me: that came out wrong. I'm going to fuck you but not today.

Lex: you don't have to please me. Get off me.

Such a sudden change in the mood.

Me: what do you mean?

Lex: I mean I don't fit your category I'm not your "type" remember? Argh I'm such a stupid girl. What was I thinking?

Me: Alex I love you ... I'm really not good with words but I really think that we have something special going on and I would love us if we would explore this.

She's silent for a good 2 minutes then bursts out crying. Crap this kid is a cry baby. I hug her trying to hush her. I don't even know what's she's crying for. Maybe she's doesn't like me like that

Lex: I love you too X. I love you so much

Me: really?

Lex: yes I've loved you for a very long time. I'm so happy that you feel the same.

I wipe her tears then kiss her forehead.

Me: Nothing is going to separate us now I promise you that. We love each other and that's all that matters. Argh I love you

Lex: I love you too

11

I kiss again. I can't control it her lips are so inviting and taste so good. A knock disturbs us, I go check only to find some drunk person. I slugged the door on his face

Lex: who was that?

Me: dunno... Now where were we?

Lex: I think we should get to know each other first.

Me: after one kiss. I promise it won't be long.

I smashed my lips on hers kissing her passionately, touching her body in all the right places. After like 4 minutes I pull out to catch my breath.

Me: you taste sweet

She blushes

Me: I wonder how you taste like (whispering) down there

She blushes more. I mean it's not a foreign language now, she initiated it first.

Me: so what do you want to know about me?

Lex: ummm

I take a seat on the bed she also takes a seat.

Lex: what do you want to be in 5 years?

Me: easy, I wanna be a musician you?

Lex: Doctor well that's in 7 years

Me: that's cute, that white coat would suit you.

She giggled

Me: I'm serious babe ... So I guess I get to ask a question too.

Lex: yeah

Me: um how many siblings do you have?

Alex: one it's my five year old sister.

Me: same here, I have only one brother.

Alex: mmh okay. So you live with your family or you got your own house?

Me: tf babe. I'm 18 so a house is a big deal. I live with my parents of course like that's a weird question to ask.

Alex: sorry I guess... It just slipped off my mind I wasn't thinking straight or

She looked so cute mumbling all that talking none stop. I'm staring at lips as she talks

Alex: you see?

Me: huh?

Alex: you're not listening to me.

Me: I'm sorry babe what were you saying

Alex: X (whining) a whole paragraph you heard nothing.

Me: you are beautiful

Advertisement

you know that?

Her cheeks flush red immediately

Alex: stop

Me: you're my girlfriend and I have the right to compliment you anytime. Come here

We kiss again, shit I am within. I am in looooooove

It's Wednesday and I'm writing mathematics. Well an update on what happened that night. Let's just say I walked her home after talking for hours then I myself got myself home without being caught. I have asked her to come to the dinner and she agreed. So today marks the last day of my school years the day I'm getting my car back. I got it in the morning as well my phone. I'm so happy fam I'm over the moon. I haven't told my family about my sexuality mainly because I'm afraid and I'm not planning on telling them anytime soon. My boys had this party

planned for today but I'll pass because I'm spending this night with my one and only girlfriend, Alex Gwabu, it's a weird surname I know but I don't care what matters is that I love her. The Franz has always been in our case but they no longer fight coz they are chickens.

Around 6 I drive to her house to pick her up. I'm nervous to even meet her parents, I knocked at the door. Some kid I guess her sibling opens.

Me: hey kiddo

She doesn't greet back. tf this kid

Me: where's your sister?

She leaves me hanging. Okay

I wait there then seconds later Alex appeared wearing a yellow dress looking gorgeous.

Alex: is there something wrong? I can change it... X don't stare at me like that.

Me: no it's fine... You look blessed! Damn girl.

Y'all her figure and curves are all on point.

Alex: thanks you're not bad yourself.

"Whose that?" I guess that is her mother.

Alex: oh mom this is my girlfriend. Xena Mlanjana.

Her mother is more dark skinned like way more than her but the beauty in that skin is unbelievable. She's a mother yet looks like in her twenties. She's Kenyan too I guess.

Me: hello ma

Her mom: uyanjani mtanami (how are you my child)

Me: ndiyaphila ma(I'm good)

Her mom: niyahamba kakuhle kwa dinner lee Sana yenu (I hope your dinner plans go great)

Me: enkosi ma(thank you ma)

Her mom: ndiya njabula ukubhona le Alex kundala entetha ngawe (I'm happy to see you Alex has been talking about you).

Me: I'm happy to see you too ma.

Alex: I think we should get going. Bye mom

She hugs her then kiss her goodbye

I open her the door then she gets in. We hit the road.

We're currently at the dinner table my parents just sat at the table and

Mom: is this your friend? (Looking disgusted)

Me: yes she.. is my friend.

Alex gives me that look.

Mom: mmmh

Dad: she's pretty.

Alex: thank you sir.

Sizwe: finally we get to meet this girl you've been talking about.

His diction, why did he put it like that? At least my parents didn't notice.

Mom: umm Alex... That's your name I believe. What do your parents do?

Alex: they own a spaza shop. Well it's most ran by my mother and me.

Mom: and your father?

Alex: he's not working at the moment.

Mom: are you your parents from South Africa?

Alex: my dad yes but my mom is from Kenya

Mom: why did you become my child's friend

Me: okay that's enough mom.

Mom: it's a simple question

Alex: it's fine X I'll answer her... I became her girlfriend because she's sweet, caring and kind.

Mom: girlfriend?

Why did she use the title? Why did she?

Me: she means a friend that is a girl mom not girlfriend as in romantic and ... You know.

Mom: ohh (she looks at her disgusted) she's so black. Xena I don't think this girl is worth to be your friend. Look at her

Me: she's my friend not yours.

Dad: wifie can you stop this

Mom: for intense what's your religion girl.

Alex: Muslim.

Mom: you see. People who pray on statues

Dad: you are violating her right of religion Vathiswa yeka lento(with a funny Xhosa accent) mna nawe fanele sithethile (Vathiswa stop this nonsense. We have to talk)

Racism. Will this ever end? We see this everyday. In schools in churches even though they hide it, in public spaces, in political activities for example DA, I wouldn't say this is racism but just picture the way people be like "ohh they put Musi Maymane as the face of the DA to conceal Helen Nzile..." Like wtf and majority of people who say that are black. And ohh you'd be hearing phrases like "blacks can't be racist" man (sighing) we get that you are black. You're a South African and gone through the apartheid era but come on. You can't be talking to people any way. You cannot, I get that freedom of speech is your right but can you talk about other stuff other than making people feel small. Personally I think DA isn't trying to cover... Let's look at the change that DA has like it's massive it's better than what other provinces look like. I'm not trying to drag this province down neh but let's look at the Eastern Cape, look at their matric results. Bad! But guess what? Nelson Mandela, Thabo Mbeki both were presidents, *their* provinces still don't have schools. Fam we see this on the news like... Especially in the rural areas.

There's been this thing going around called Xenophobia. It's not that hectic but it was at its peak in 2008. It is said that South Africa is a rainbow nation. We'll look at the rainbow nation beating up foreigners is that fair? No offense but some South Africans are lazy. Quick example. A person matriculates and

doesn't get good marks right or fails. He thinks his life is over does nothing about that. Starts smoking, drinking living a useless life. Some people drop out! Okay tell me this how many people ... You see walking in the street with no jobs? How many people of those people can take a hobby let's say painting and make money out of that. It doesn't take that much effort. It's just that South African people depend too much on the government! Our government is too generous which makes us lazy thus leading to xenophobia because they are jealous that out there someone who was nothing made something out of nowhere, these people own Spaza shops. Like my girlfriend's mother. I pray... I pray that with this thing going on. They aren't affected. It won't come back right... People learnt from what happened in the past. They can't repeat that right?

I believe we can do better than that. From now on I won't be seeing "my friend" as foriegner, from now on, I'll greet other races with respect. All the respect they deserve. From today I'll stop saying "elakweja"..."elakwere kwere" because I see it through my eyes how this hurts. And it's my parents! From today I vow that to myself. I will recognise everyone the same!

Mom and dad went to talk, Alex also stands up

Alex: I think I'm done here

Me: Lexy please don't leave like this

She ignores me and walks outside I follow her as she walk out the gate.

Me: Alex please let's talk about this.

Alex: talk about what? It's clear that you are ashamed of me X. I told my mother about you. What's hard about you doing the same.

Me: baby my parents are strict.

Alex: strict my foot Kabelo! I don't want to see you again leave me alone don't ever talk to me. I don't wanna talk with you delete my number.

With that she walked out of the gate, I know her house is 3 kilometers away so I take my car and drive to her as she turns the corner.

Me: let me drop you off.

Alex: no I have feet.

Me: I get that you're mad can you stop being stubborn what if you get raped.

Alex: okay X

She hops in then I drive to the end of the houses. Where there no one to disturb. I want us to talk we can't carry on like this!

Alex: what are you doing?

Me: Alex I love you

Somewhat she blushes.

Me: I really do love you Alex and I don't wanna make you sad. I don't wanna be the reason you cry. My parents are Christians and they don't believe in people of the same gender dating. This dating this is new to me too you know. I know you may not believe it but Alex all I'm asking you is to give me some time.

She swallows something, salvia I think.

Me: I've recently accepted myself that I like girls too. And it's too soon to just come out like that... I'm sure it also took you time.

Alex: I've known that I like girls since I was 13. So my mom accepted it then.

Me: lucky you. My parents are very strict

Alex: but you said your parents are chilled.

Me: I lied about that.

Alex: wow

Me: I'm sorry about that.

Alex: have you ever slept with someone?

Me: yes I did.

I mean I wanna seem cool you know. I watch these typa movies like Fifty shades of grey, addicted

porn so that if it happens that I get laid. I know exactly what to do. But I'm not using the props they use... Belts and stuff...nah.

Me: it was just a fling nothing deep.

Alex: ohh so my assumptions were right?

Me: yes baby... (Clears throat) about the thing we talked about. For now can I address you as a friend in front of my family?

Alex: it's okay... Your family hate me thou.

Me: I'll talk to them baby. I'll talk to them I promise you that.

Alex:okay babe...you know... I love you X.

Me: I love you too.

She pecks my lips. We kiss for sometime then I pull out

Me: let's go to the back sit

I switch on stuck with you- by Ariana Grande

"And there's nothing I, nothing I, I can do

I'm stuck with you, stuck with you, stuck with you

So go ahead and drive me insane

Baby, run your mouth

I still wouldn't change being

Stuck with you, stuck with you, stuck with you

I'm stuck with you, stuck with you, stuck with you, baby"

Then we go to the back seat and start kissing. I rub her skin smoothly. She deepens the kiss her tongue in my throat shit she's doing wonders on my body. She rubs my back doing circles tickling sensation runs over my body. I press my body against hers kissing her neck. Breathing warm air on her necks I took off her dress while she takes off my shirt. I'm hungry for her. I want her body against mine. All of her on my body. Once she's naked I stared at her perfect body, she covers up. I remove her hands

Me: damn! You are have a beautiful body.

Her cheeks turn red she's so cute when bushes I get on top on her then try remember how they did it in the porn I watched. I

lay wet kisses her breasts kissed her all the way to her stomach then went up letting out air on her. She shakes as I kiss her breasts sucking them then played with her nipples

Alex: fuck!! Ohhh

I continue sucking her breasts for sometime repeatedly she moans softly grabbing on the seats holding it like life depends on it

Alex: ahh!!!!!!

I groan in response then kissed her neck again kissed her mouth we kiss for some time then I make traces down to her pussy. First I kiss between her thighs kissed her sucking them moving closer closer then let out warm air on her outer nunu

Alex: ohhh !!! Ahhh jhkbnm

It's like she's crying

Alex: fuck !

I kiss her nunu

Alex: yesss

I smash my full mouth on it kissing it then start eating her out

Alex: ohhh!!!!!!!!!!

She grabs on my hair pushing me deeper, she comes and I continue eating her

Alex: oh heavens fjckhjjjn ohhhh my hjkjdddb

I get deeper in her eating her, eating her straight. I stick my tongue deep deep making circles in her then inserted my finger. Fuck I'm so horny I think I also cum

I'm fucking her brains out while hot liquid comes out of me like... She rubs my breasts too fuck!!!

Me: mmmh

Im now back to kissing her while she rubs my breasts touching them with her tiny hands. Her hand travels down to- wiwiwiwi the police tf! I button my shirt then she quickly wears her dress. Knock at the window. I wheel the window down

Me: yes sir

Gu Gu Gu Gu my heart beat is pumping fast rn. What if we'll get arrested.

Police: why are you parked here?

Me: um we're chilling

I stare at Lex, she's sweating!

Police: is it so young lady?

Me: yes sir.

Police: get out of the car.

So this police is a white man, it's my first time seeing one but anyways we get out.

Police: put you hands over your heads

We do then he searches the car,

Police: I know you're smoking drugs here.

That's what he thinks phew that's good moss coz weren't. He searches and finds nothing. Then he writes something.

Police: I'm giving you a ticket of parking in the wrong spot.

It's not like I care. I take it then we drive off. I drop Alex at her house Me: goodbye kiss

I peck her lips once then pulled out.

Me: I love you Alex: I love you too.

Me: I'll call you before I go to sleep. Stay arlet.

Alex: alright lady now let me out.

I unlocked the door then went to open for her gave her on more kiss before she left. I watch her as she disappeared to the house. In my mind I'm like. Damn!!!! I love this girl.

13

When I came back home, no one is around I wanted to talk to my parents but anyways. I go to my room and took my phone then called my future wifie

Lex: hey you

Me: hey baby

I must admit I'm blushing plus nervous.

Lex: I was thinking about you

Me: me too. I miss you

Lex: I miss you too,I wish you here with me.

Me: same here babe maybe I should come pick you up.

Lex: right now?

Me: yeah I mean there is no one here. I'm home alone.

Lex: I doubt mom will allow that.

Me: okay then

Lex: I'll definitely see you tomorrow maybe you can come this side.

Me: that's cool... How are feeling after the...you know.

Lex:I feel weird.

Me: it's normal you'll be fine. Does it hurt?

Lex: a little

I start imagining how it will feel when it's me. I can't even imagine it happening. I'm scared like I don't want no one touching me there. Honestly I must say thanks to that police for saving the day. I may seem unfair but she asked for it. I didn't ask for it, fair enough right?

Me: remember to drink lots of water

I don't even know how it helps but I'm just suggesting.

Alex: I will.

Me: how was it? Did it feel good? Bad?

Alex: it was out of this world X. You are good! I can't wait till we do it again.

Me: that's good to hear. (Blushing)

Me: what are you wearing now?

Alex: um my nightie

Me: mmmh

Alex: what are you wearing?

Me: right now? I'm undressing so I would say I'm wearing my boxers.

Alex: oh ... I can imagine you in that.

I chuckled

Me: what are you doing?

Alex: Well I was reading a novel before you disturbed me.

Me: disturbed? I should drop the call and save my airtime then

Alex: no don't I was joking baby don't drop

—

We talked for hours till I fell asleep. Honestly I don't know when I slept. When I woke up, the call was still on. I could hear her snoring softly. She sounds so cute and innocent. I listened to her sleep minutes later I hear her sneeze then the call is dropped.

I called her

Lex: hey I just dropped the call just now. Sorry I thought you were asleep.

Me: it's okay. I wanted to say good morning by the way.

Lex: aww good morning too my baby.

Me: how did you sleep?

Lex: good, I don't know when I slept. I'm sorry for wasting your airtime.

Me: nah don't worry about it.

Lex: okay then...babe ?

Me: yeah

Lex: I was thinking we take ourselves out. Maybe we go to McDonald's or something. I have money saved up for that.

Me: that's a great idea sure I'm in.

Lex: so today maybe during lunch or something.

Me: you can't wait to see me huh

Lex: yeah I miss that cute face of yours

Me: I can't wait to see you. Wear a dress,it suits you.

Lex: will do...babe I'll call you back. Mom is calling me.

Me: alright I love you

Lex: I love you too.

We both made kisses then dropped the call.

I take a shower singing I am happy! I make sure that I bath extra extra like I'm cleaning my ears and brushing my feet with stone. I wanna be clean you feel me.

I wear all black then a necklace. Leather jacket and put my hair in a ponytail. I then went downstairs it's 10:00 am already so I guess I'm ready. I went to the kitchen to grab something to eat since I ate nothing. Found Sizwe eating omelette

Me: mapha (can I have some?)

Sizwe: there's some left in the pan.

Me: thank you.

I made some for me taking 8 slices of bread. It's few slices I know, I want to leave space for the food we'll be eating there.

After eating I put the plate in the sink

Sizwe: e...who's gonna wash it?

Me: you.

Sizwe: in your dreams.

Me: why aren't you at work today.

Sizwe: I'm sick. I have fever

Me: mmmh have you by any chance saw the rents today?

Sizwe: they had a trip so they left yesterday around 21:00

Me: mmmh

Sizwe: they are coming back that week thou. In December

Me: you'd swear they are running away from their problems.
Anyways let me leave you in peace.

Sizwe: where are you going, you look good!

Me: I have a date.

Sizwe: with that girl.

Me: yah

Sizwe: so you've accepted huh

Me: yes I broke the ice. I like her and I'm willing to fight for us
but the thing is how am I going to tell mother that I'm a
lesbian.

Sizwe: good luck with that.

Right!

The date went on well I'd say. My parents went to this
conference in Joburg and other things so it's just me and my
brother. Even though most of the time he's at work. Since it's
holidays and there's nothing to do, throughout the days I've
been inviting Alex over so we can chill and occasionally...you
know. We talk, I'm falling deeper for her everyday. I'm falling
for her perfect imperfections, she is amazing and kind and
generous. Damn the girl is blessed! So it's been like three weeks

since my parents left. They are coming back tomorrow so today I invited Alex over so now we're talking, vibing you feel me.

Music on

"I'm a savage (yeah)

Classy, bougie, ratchet (yeah)

Sassy, moody, nasty (hey, hey, yeah)

Acting stupid, what's happening? Bitch (whoa

Advertisement

whoa)

What's happening? Bitch (whoa, whoa)

I'm a savage, yeah

Classy, bougie, ratchet, yeah

Sassy, moody, nasty, huh

Acting stupid, what's happening? Bitch

What's happening? (Ay, ah)"

Savage- Meghan stallion

Alex: when are your parents coming back.

Me: tomorrow, why?

Alex: I was just wondering maybe I can be there when you tell them.

Me: mmh about that. Ummm maybe we should tell them later after matric results or something

Alex: babe Christmas is in a few days I'd like if we spend it together. I can invite my family over and we have a good time.

Me: that's not happening

Alex: huh?

Me: you know the situation.

Alex: so I'll forever be private. I won't be know as your girlfriend, you'll be seen as single and I have on the other side am not ashamed to day you're my girl. We've been dating for a month babe. I'll have your back when you tell them. I'll be your number one supporter

Me: umm I'll think about it Lexy I promise babe then ...

The reaction on my mom's face, I can't imagine that happening. But tomorrow is tomorrow. I'll tell them when they are back

Me: I promise okay.

She pouts

Me: okay

Alex: alright baby thank you

I kiss her cheeks, a cute giggle comes out of her lips. I smash my lips on hers, we kiss for sometime. Now the kiss is getting heated, we're taking each others clothes off. She pulls off the kiss

Alex: can I pleasure you?

Me: me? You mean down there?

She nods

Me: no baby you're too innocent for that.

Alex: I'm not innocent baby please I want you to feel good too. You pleasure me it's only fair

Shit! You know what... it's now or never. Me: okay

Her eyes soften, she seems happy.

I continue with the kiss and now we're both naked. She lay kisses on my neck Me: mmh

The door flies open. Shit! Mom when did they come back? I thought they were coming tomorrow.

Me: what happened to knocking?

That's all I could say even though I know I'm in the pits today. I'm gonna be kicked out... My heart is racing, this happened to soon. And not the way it should have. The look on her face is beyond being shocked, she's disappointed in me!

14

Vathiswa

I feel my world being shattered. I can't believe what I am seeing with my eyes. My daughter having ...I can't even say it. In my own house. My daughter with a girl. A black kwere kwere at that. A foreigner. Someone we don't trust. How low can she settle for. I thought Kabelo of being married to Aaron, they have a and be happy. It's simple as that but my Xena is sleeping with girls! A black girl at that. This kid has no shame. She has no shame at all .

Me: tatakhe!!! Yizobona (calling out Xena's father to come see)

Me: Kabelo ngamanyundululu amanyala atheni laa enzeka apha (what's happening here). You need serious prayers

Xena

Me: mom I can explain.

Mom: this needs no explanation.

Dad just appeared while we're still wearing our clothes.

Dad: yimihlola Ka James (African phrase of being shocked)

Dad: X what's happening here.

Mom: tatakhe Kabelo is moving out.

Dad: what?

Mom: heeey I'm kicking this rubbish out

She said in rage and dad seems afraid of her, as always.

Mom: pack your clothes and leave my house!

Me: the fuck!

Mom: nyenyak ntoni (tf what?) Leave my house boy girl leave I'm not gonna live with satanism I'm a Christian. Please don't test me. Don't start me I'm not a car .

I packed my things

Mom: heyyy that's mine leave those clothes alone. Leave leave this instant Udenza narrr lomntana marn(she's making me nauseas)

Me: mama please I'm your child

Mom: tatakhe khayothatha invubu pha (go take the shambok)

I ran right then with Alex on my side. Jumped over the gate while Alex slides it open and went out the normal way.

Alex: babe wait for me.

Honestly I kinda left her behind now I'm trying to wait for her. I could see mom with the shambok at the gate ... Phew we are long gone.

We reached her house coz it's the only place we thought of even thou it's far. Once we're inside the house

Alex: your mother thou

Me: she's crazy don't remind me trust me I know

Alex: yeah beating you with a shambok thou. You know how that thing is.

Me: it's not a big deal. I'm used to it

Alex: you mean she bits you with that?

Me: ummm

I'm quite ashamed to say this in front of her. What will she think of me, the cocky cool X is beaten up while I'm the one beating people at school.

Alex: X talk to me.

Me: yes she does.

Alex: oh that's ...cruel I mean a shambok.

Me: Yeap

Alex: I'm sorry you had to go through that.

Me: nah it's cool.

Alex: it's not babe.

She pecks my lips unexpected.

Alex: I love you. I don't want anything making you upset.

Me: I love you too lex.

She continues kissing me, I pull out.

Me: is your mom around?

Alex: no she went to town to stock.

Me: your dad?

Alex: somewhere. I don't know where he is and my sister is on holiday with my aunt.

Me: ohh okay.

Alex: so it's only us.

Me: lock the door.

She locked door then came back to me started kissing. I pulled out

Switched on music from my phone

"Having hallucinations

I'm losing sleep every night

Keep trying to cover my eyes

My eyes, yeah

Is it my imagination?

I think I'm losing my mind, yeah

Still see your face all the time

All the time"

Dsvn_hallucination.

Me: let's do it the olden way.

Alex: (whispering)how

Her eyes getting small and red. I walk to her then slowly took off her top.

Me: I'll undress you. You undress me.

She nods then I take off her jeans. I'm staring at body yet again. She's perfect, small waist and stomach. Does she eat?

Alex: you're making me shy stop staring.

Me: umm sorry

Then she took off my tshit. My heart starts beating fast.

Excitement filled my heart, she's taking her time. My pants are

in the floor and she's also staring at me with lust. I can't take it any longer. I smash my lips on her, with the contact of our skin I groan as she moans

Alex: mmh

Me: ahh!!!

She wraps her legs on my waist, I stick my tongue deeper on her throat the kiss grows passionate and I'm hungry for her. I snog her deep for some time as we moan together. I lay her on the bed then crawl to her kissing her neck. Placing wet kisses on her neck. I lay one kiss ...after the other

Alex: mmh jghdkk

I suck her neck for a good two minutes

Alex: ohhh fkk fuck me X

That's music to my ears. I move to her ear licked it sucking it softly biting it.

Alex: oh God

She grabs my back our skin touching, the contact of our skin makes it worse, She rubs my back pushing me against her, we're so intimate it's makes me so horny, her legs softly moving up and down my back. Pushing me to her closer. I pull out then spread her legs wide. Ohh she's still looks tight. I sit on her nunu with mine then grind on her

Alex: ohh hjjfkjn

I move forward and backwards slow motion

Our treasurers moving in opposite directions.

Me: oh fuck

I move faster and faster, forward and backwards.

Alex: yesss

Me: knhb

I cum oh her but still continue

Me: fuck ohm yesses

Moving very fast I think I'm fainting oh my goodness. I shut my eyes she cums after some time I collapse next to her.

Alex: that...was...amazing.

Me: out of this world

Alex: let me clean you up

Me: you're sure?

Alex: yes

Me: let me start with you.

Alex: okay

The song is put on repeat

"Tryna rewind 'til we're back where we started

Yeah, that's all I want

Yeah, night after night after night

I'm still haunted

I'm haunted, baby

I'm haunted by you, you

fall asleep and dream of

You, you, late at night I scream for

You, you, waiting on a deja-vu

But until then

I live with hallucinations

Yeah, they're just hallucinations

And I'll just hallucinate

'Cause you're not here

Hallucinations"

Dsvn_Hallucinations

I untangle myself then go down on her nunu. Licked her clean
inserted my tongue in

Alex: mmmh

I made circles in her eating her out, licked her ate her, licked and put one hand in first with my tongue in. I licked her clit.

Alex: ohhffg X

Moved my tongue up and down her clit, she vibrates like crazy.

Alex: gkdhkd m ohhh X

I moved my tongue fast on clit she shakes like. Licking her up and down eating her straight going deep in her, she cums again I insert two fingers

She jumps

Me: I'll be gentle

I eat some of her cum then kissed her

Me: you taste good.

She tastes sweet, clean and healthy.

We kiss for sometime then

Alex: your turn.

Me: yeah baby

I'm scared Fam. She's eating me out today. My first time being licked. Sounds weird but ...

She spreads my legs. My heart beating fast mainly because I'm scared.

Alex: ready?

Me: yes

First she brushed me. Moving her hand on my nunu mmmh it feels good. Then I feel something warm on my nunu she's breathing on it. Mmmh she gently bites my clit softly. Shit! I went wild. I feel like electricity just ran through me, she does it again

Me: oh yes

Then she starts eating me, ohhh heavens please I breath out shaking. My legs shiver hard as she continually stroke me. She goes in deep...ouch. I feel stretching. She puts a one finger. I jump in pain. What was that?

Alex: relax, let's try again

I breathe out trying to calm myself down.

She inserts two fingers again and the pain is so sharp I try to endure. I can't

Me: stop!

Alex: okay I'm sorry

Me: your turn.

Alex: um ... Promise you won't be mad.

Me: okay?

She gets off bed then takes the dildo we bought first week. But decided not to use it yet. Basically a dildo is a version of a dick not exactly it but a version of it.

Me: okay we won't be using it on me today thou.

Alex: o..kay

Me: I'm joking.

Her lips curl to a smile. She hands it out to me then lay on her back. Okay so yeah I take this thing first kissed her treasure. Without warning I insert it on her she jumps

Me: I'll be gentle

I brush it on her up and down. Then kiss her treasure again eat her a little till some white stuff comes out then slid it in.

Alex: mmmh

Me: better?

Alex: yeah

I slid in more further. She grabs on the sheets tight like she's in pain

Alex: mmmh

I let it out and it has white stuff and some blood on it then put it in again pushing it harder. It's really hard for it to like slid in. I push it more

Ale: ahh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

I slowly pull it out and she's crying.

Me: babe

Tears steaming on her eyes.

Me: babe I'm sorry

Kissing her forehead.

Me: I'm sorry

I stop then hug her tight for some time

Me: let's take a shower or something.

We get in the bathroom. She seems better now. We shower together I rub her back washing it she rubs mine.

Me: how are you feeling?

Alex: its burning down there

Me: is there something I can do?

Alex: I have pain killers I'll be fine. How are you feeling?

I hug her kiss her forehead as the water runs on our different skin tones. Then we went out of the shower and lotion each other. She drinks pain killers while I wear my clothes. An hour later her mom is back

Aaron

I've been laying low for some time. I'm taking a break from seeing X and all that. Listen I love Xena with my soul and I'm sure she's my soulmate. We planned to go to the same varsity y'all. Like dreamt of our future houses when we were younger. We were gonna live in Jamaica Fam. We were gonna be family even thou she used to address me as bro like we had dreams together. I've been giving her time to think about our love and I see that she's not thinking about any of this. She hates me and I love her. She's been rejecting me, I comment on her photos I DM her, I write on her wall and nothing happens. Guess what she did. She blocked me! I also didn't believe like you can't believe it. So I've created a second account and I'm stalking her using it.

Wait...what if. What if I sleep with Alex I know she's a sex freak. Well I saw her at a sex shop with X someday. And I know X isn't

really into such things. Now I have to think of a way to get her in bed. Okay let me DM her

I typed

"Hey there" after few minutes, beep

"Who are you?" She doesn't know me.

"I'm Aaron, I want to talk to you, it's about X "

Seconds later, beep

" Okay I'll first tell X"

Racism. Will this ever end? We see this everyday. In schools in churches even though they hide it, in public spaces, in political activities for example DA, I wouldn't say this is racism but just picture the way people be like "ohh they put Musi Maymanne as the face of the DA to conceal Helen Nzile..." Like wtf and majority of people who say that are black. And ohh you'd be hearing phrases like "blacks can't be racist" man (sighing) we get that you are black. You're a South African and gone through the apartheid era but come on. You can't be talking to people any way. You cannot, I get that freedom of speech is your right but can you talk about other stuff other than making people feel small. Personally I think DA isn't trying to cover... Let's look at the change that DA has like it's massive it's better than what other provinces look like. I'm not trying to drag this province down neh but let's look at the Eastern Cape, look at their matric results. Bad! But guess what? Nelson Mandela, Thabo Mbeki both were presidents, *their* provinces still don't have schools. Fam we see this on the news like... Especially in the rural areas.

There's been this thing going around called Xenophobia. It's not that hectic but it was at its peak in 2008. It is said that South Africa is a rainbow nation. We'll look at the rainbow nation beating up foreigners is that fair? No offense but some South Africans are lazy. Quick example. A person matriculates and

doesn't get good marks right or fails. He thinks his life is over does nothing about that. Starts smoking, drinking living a useless life. Some people drop out! Okay tell me this how many people ... You see walking in the street with no jobs? How many people of those people can take a hobby let's say painting and make money out of that. It doesn't take that much effort. It's just that South African people depend too much on the government! Our government is too generous which makes us lazy thus leading to xenophobia because they are jealous that out there someone who was nothing made something out of nowhere, these people own Spaza shops. Like my girlfriend's mother. I pray... I pray that with this thing going on. They aren't affected. It won't come back right... People learnt from what happened in the past. They can't repeat that right?

I believe we can do better than that. From now on I won't be seeing "my friend" as foriegner, from now on, I'll greet other races with respect. All the respect they deserve. From today I'll stop saying "elakweja"... "elakwere kwere" because I see it through my eyes how this hurts. And it's my parents! From today I vow that to myself. I will recognise everyone the same!

Mom and dad went to talk, Alex also stands up

Alex: I think I'm done here

Me: Lexy please don't leave like this

She ignores me and walks outside I follow her as she walk out the gate.

Me: Alex please let's talk about this.

Alex: talk about what? It's clear that you are ashamed of me X. I told my mother about you. What's hard about you doing the same.

Me: baby my parents are strict.

Alex: strict my foot Kabelo! I don't want to see you again leave me alone don't ever talk to me. I don't wanna talk with you delete my number.

With that she walked out of the gate, I know her house is 3 kilometers away so I take my car and drive to her as she turns the corner.

Me: let me drop you off.

Alex: no I have feet.

Me: I get that you're mad can you stop being stubborn what if you get raped.

Alex: okay X

She hops in then I drive to the end of the houses. Where there no one to disturb. I want us to talk we can't carry on like this!

Alex: what are you doing?

Me: Alex I love you

Somewhat she blushes.

Me: I really do love you Alex and I don't wanna make you sad. I don't wanna be the reason you cry. My parents are Christians and they don't believe in people of the same gender dating. This dating this is new to me too you know. I know you may not believe it but Alex all I'm asking you is to give me some time.

She swallows something, salvia I think.

Me: I've recently accepted myself that I like girls too. And it's too soon to just come out like that... I'm sure it also took you time.

Alex: I've known that I like girls since I was 13. So my mom accepted it then.

Me: lucky you. My parents are very strict

Alex: but you said your parents are chilled.

Me: I lied about that.

Alex: wow

Me: I'm sorry about that.

Alex: have you ever slept with someone?

Me: yes I did.

I mean I wanna seem cool you know. I watch these typha movies like Fifty shades of grey, addicted

porn so that if it happens that I get laid. I know exactly what to do. But I'm not using the props they use... Belts and stuff...nah.

Me: it was just a fling nothing deep.

Alex: ohh so my assumptions were right?

Me: yes baby... (Clears throat) about the thing we talked about. For now can I address you as a friend in front of my family?

Alex: it's okay... Your family hate me thou.

Me: I'll talk to them baby. I'll talk to them I promise you that.

Alex:okay babe...you know... I love you X.

Me: I love you too.

She pecks my lips. We kiss for sometime then I pull out

Me: let's go to the back sit

I switch on stuck with you- by Ariana Grande

"Yes, it's true, I'm happy to be stuck with you
Yes, it's true, I'm so happy to be stuck with you
'Cause I can see that you're happy to be stuck with me
We've had our doubts, we never took them seriously
And we've had our ins and outs, but that's the way it's
supposed to be
We thought about giving up, but we could never stay away
Thought about breaking up, but now we know it's much too
late
And it's no great mystery
If we change our minds
Eventually, it's back to you and me"

Then we go to the back seat and start kissing. I rub her skin smoothly. She deepens the kiss her tongue in my throat shit she's doing wonders on my body. She rubs my back doing circles tickling sensation runs over my body. I press my body against hers kissing her neck. Breathing warm air on her necks I took off her dress while she takes off my shirt. I'm hungry for her. I want her body against mine. All of her on my body. Once

she's naked I stared at her perfect body, she covers up. I
remove her hands

Me: damn! You are have a beautiful body.

Her cheeks turn red she's so cute when bushes I get on top on
her then try remember how they did it in the porn I watched. I
lay wet kisses her breasts kissed her all the way to her stomach
then went up letting out air on her. She shakes as I kiss her
breasts sucking them then played with her nipples

Alex: fuck!! Ohhh

I continue sucking her breasts for sometime repeatedly she
moans softly grabbing on the seats holding it like life depends
on it

Alex: ahh!!!!!!

I groan in response then kissed her neck again kissed her mouth
we kiss for some time then I make traces down to her pussy.
First I kiss between her thighs kissed her sucking them moving
closer closer then let out warm air on her outer nunu

Alex: ohhh !!! Ahhh jhkbnm

It's like she's crying

Alex: fuck !

I kiss her nunu

Alex: yesss

I smash my full mouth on it kissing it then start eating her out

Alex: ohhh!!!!!!!

She grabs on my hair pushing me deeper, she comes and I continue eating her

Alex: oh heavens fjckhjjjn ohhhh my hjjkjdddb

I get deeper in her eating her, eating her straight. I stick my tongue deep deep making circles in her then inserted my finger. Fuck I'm so horny I think I also cum

I'm fucking her brains out while hot liquid comes out of me like... She rubs my breasts too fuck!!!

Me: mmmh

Im now back to kissing her while she rubs my breasts touching them with her tiny hands. Her hand travels down to- wiwiwiwi the police tf! I button my shirt then she quickly wears her dress. Knock at the window. I wheel the window down

Me: yes sir

Gu Gu Gu Gu my heart beat is pumping fast rn. What if we'll get arrested.

Police: why are you parked here?

Me: um we're chilling

I stare at Lex, she's sweating!

Police: is it so young lady?

Me: yes sir.

Police: get out of the car.

So this police is a white man, it's my first time seeing one but anyways we get out.

Police: put you hands over your heads

We do then he searches the car,

Police: I know you're smoking drugs here.

That's what he thinks phew that's good moss coz weren't. He searchs and finds nothing.

Then he writes something.

Police: I'm giving you a ticket of parking in the wrong spot.

It's not like I care. I take it then we drive off. I drop Alex at her house

Me: goodbye kiss

I peck her lips once then pulled out.

Me: I love you

Alex: I love you too.

Me: I'll call you before I go to sleep. Stay arlet.

Alex: alright lady now let me out.

I unlocked the door then went to open for her gave her on more kiss before she left. I watch her as she disappeared to the house. In my mind I'm like. Damn!!!! I love this girl.

16

"no don't tell her, you will regret doing that"

I wait for sometime then beep

"Why?"

"It's about something she did and I'm sure you won't like it"

"What did she do" that response was fast.

"Meet me tomorrow next to our school at 10:00, it's a date"

No response. I hope I've sent the message she'll pull through.

I called Linda, Caleb's boyfriend. I know she has hots for X but she won't get her anytime soon but here is the plan. So I will give her a little taste of X ... Yho guys my plan is lit. Okay let me split the details y'all. Wait let me call her first

I dialed her number, it's ringing

Linda: Aaron

Me: hey you.

Linda: look what we had was a once off. I feel bad for cheating on Caleb with you. So please don't cause me any stress.

Me: listen Linda

Linda: what?

Me: so you know X and your friend, Alex are dating

Linda: yeah mxm they bore yaz. X is mine I mean who is Alex to be with my girl, a hot lesbian like X.

Me: yeah and she's my best friend too, we have to get back at Alex. We have to.

Linda: do you have anything in mind

Me: yeah... Tomorrow you are going to visit Alex's house while she is here with me. I'll tell her that X is cheating so she'll go back home and find you two there making out.

Linda: great plan.

Me: but after that your job is done and I'll pay you.

Linda: sounds great. So what are you wearing right now?

Me: know what? Just come over I'll pick you up.

She giggled then I drop the call. Okay now don't look at me like that. She's my fuck girl so we occasionally do the deed until Caleb found out, that was after I left the squad thou. So now she's single and we're friends with benefits.

So the plan is what Linda will do then I want X to catch me having the deed with Alex, that will happen soon after their *break up*. That way they won't ever love each other again and X will see that me and her we're meant to be and that she's

straight. Her liking girls was a distrubtion. Kabelo is a girl, period! I don't get why a girl would date a girl. Yes she's was my friend and I thought that she just liked dressing up as a boy. All along I was wrong. Now is the time to remind her that girls are not her thing. After her heart is broken, she'll come back running in my arms. I can't wait for that day!

Xena

Alex is on her phone while I'm also staring at my Instagram feed. Then she looks at me weirdly

Me: what?

Alex: do you have something to tell me?

Me: like what?

Alex: anything are you hiding something?

Me: no baby what makes you ask that?

Alex: mmm okay

Me: what makes you say that?

Alex: nothing

She continues scrolling through her phone and I'm like what is she on about. Anyways I let that slide then a knock at the door. I look at her. She gets up then attend to that, it's her mother.

Her mom: jdnjkmm hjjjnk

That's what I heard Fam.

Alex: jjjdfff fffdssd Xena

Her mom: she's here?

Alex: yes mom, Xena come out

I walked to the door

Me: hey ma

She looks at Alex, oh I'm wearing my boxers. My bad

Me: I'm sorry about ... let me get dressed.

I walk back to dress up

Now it seems they are arguing or something. They walk out of site

Advertisement

after wearing my pants I'm not sure whether I should go or what, I walked to the lounge where they were. Once I enter they are quite.

Me: is everything okay?

Her mom: ummm I think we should talk about you being here.

We sat down then I told her what happened, she seemed understanding. There was a "but" thou

Her mom: um I don't think we can be able to give you a roof.

Alex: mom please I beg you. She'll sleep in my room.

Me: I won't be trouble I promise ma'am.

Her mom: you can call me Gwen

Me: I promise Gwen

Gwen: the thing is it's the situation. I don't think the man of this house will allow that.

Alex: mom well hide her in the bedroom or something.

Gwen seems to be thinking for some time

Then finally she nods.

"Ndiyathenga! (I came to buy)" Someone said at the gate.

Alex went to attend that, so the spaza shop is next to the gate like it's a garage. I looked at the pictures of people at the wallunit There's Alex, she looks so cute in that school uniform.

Gwen: my daughter is so lucky to have you.

Me: oh I'm also lucky to have her.

Gwen: I hope that one day you'll get married.

Me: that's my wish too hey

She smiles at me

Gwen: she told me how you stood up for her that day. That was very brave of you.

Me: oh it's cool no biggie. I love your daughter and I'd do that over and over again

Gwen: mmm(smiling) now tell me. Have you slept together?

tf! That was unexpected.

Me: um no she's still a virgin. We will wait until marriage.

Gwen: that's good, I was worried. You know all of her girlfriends always rush to the intimacy part and she'd always tell me. I told her that she was young for that so they always break things off with her just because of that. That was two years ago thou. I'm happy that after so many years she found someone like you who doesn't rush into anything.

I fake smiled. Why is she telling me this?

Me: so she tells you everything?(I'm worried Fam, what if she told her about...you know)

Gwen: well she told me that you only cuddle and nothing more.

Me: oh that's good.

Gwen: yeah are you a virgin?

She is nosy!

Me: yes

I made the most uncomfortable smile, when is Alex coming back?

She smiles again then there silence as our eyes are now stuck to skeem saam. After some time she stands up and went to the kitchen.

This house is so homely. It's a four room RDP house with an extension of a garage. It's not that fancy but quite good looking, wait a house can't be good looking but you get my point moss. The TV isn't the flat screen I'm used too, it's those TV with a pregnant behind. You get what I mean moss.

Alex comes back then sits next to me taking the remote changing the channel.

Me: dude I'm still watching.

Alex: I wanna watch my favourite program.

Me: okay then

She changed into a religious channel of people praying to a mosque. It's quite weird coz I don't believe in Allah (their God) but I respect that it's her religion. There's nothing I can do about that. Her mother wears their clothing like the long robes and stuff. But Lex wears normal clothes like you and me. She watches in excitement then you know "ohm" I'm not sure if I spelt that correct. But that thing playing at 17:30 on SABC 1 it's like those people.

At 20:00 we ate supper watching Generations. After that we wash the dishes together, telling each other stories. It's now bed time so her and Gwen go pray and I on the other side on my phone coz ... I mean you get it. In 10 minutes she comes back then changed in PJ's and I took off my pants, I'm left with my boxers and t-shirt

She slide in the blanket I get in too wrapping my arms around her. I kissed her neck.

Alex: mmh

I chuckled then kissed her again, she moans softly then

Alex: X mom is on another side.

Me: so?

Alex: she will hear us.

Me: I'm pleasuring my girl.

I suck her neck in a ticklish manner she giggled

Alex: stop.

Me: why? (Kissing her ear lobe)

Alex: ohh mmh X ...(whispering) stop.

Me: okay

I turned the other side.

Alex: babe

Me: yes

Alex: I was joking.

Me: mmmm

She pulls me closer to her then kisses my cheek. I smile

Me: leave me alone

She continues then lays wet kisses on my neck sucking me.

Me: oh my ... Fuck lex

I turned to her then we kiss for some time

I pull out

Me: is the door locked?

She nods

Me: good, now come to papa

She giggles i get on top of her

"What's happening there? "

Me: yhuwi

We look at each other speechless.

Alex: nothing mom

Gwen: you better sleep now ladies, we have a long day tomorrow.

Alex: we're asleep ma.

Then silence. We laugh silently I get off her.

We ended up talking about sweet nothings, getting to know her better. I'm always learning something new everyday which makes me love her more.

I kissed her forehead once I notice she's fast asleep while I'm telling her about my childhood stories.

17

I was woken up by a door opening, the main door that is. I'm a light sleeper so I sat up not knowing what to do. What if it's a thug? Our door is locked at least. But Gwen's door. I started panicking.

Me: Alex

She's not waking up

Me: Alex wake up

Nothing she's a heavy sleeper this one

I got up tip toed and looked through the door knob, the man get in Gwen's room. I took a farther dust then unlocked the door.

"Eyaaaa" I kicked him with karate when he least expected. Then dusted him with the farther dust.

Me: what do you want?

He lays unconscious on the floor, Gwen walks on us wearing a gown

Gwen: what have you done? Oh my husband.

tf! Did I just My bad.

Me: I'm sorry I thought he was...

Gwen: help me put him in bed.

He is stinking, alcohol smell on flick. Does he know that there is something called water. No offense but that's how bad he smelled. We put him in bed then I apologized for my actions. I was only looking out for everyone.

I went back to sleep.

Soon it's another day.

I woke next to the love of my life, she's still sleeping so I stared at her while she softly snores, the feeling of being by her side all the time is amazing. I hear someone being slapped. What's happening? I got up to check, it's coming from Gwen's door. Another punch then someone being kicked. I least expected this. Then I hear sharp screams from Gwen, Alex wakes up.

Me: I think your mom is in trouble

Alex: don't disturb them or else you'll get a beating too.

The beating continues, painful screams of agony, sharp pain on my ears. I close my ears to avoid it. She pieces through, it's too much to hear. Alex has earphones on tears flowing.

After sometime the beating stops and now it's just sobs from her. She cries so painful.

I hear the door being slabbed

Advertisement

front door that is. From the window I could see the man
(husband) walking out then went in the opposite tarven.

Me: babe... It's over.

She was humming songs on her playlist. Then she takes her
earphones off looking down

Alex: I'm sorry

Me: there's nothing to be sorry about, it's not your fault.

She wipes tears falling on her cheeks.

Me: hey come here

I bury her on my chest.

Me: It's gonna be fine, don't cry.

I sang "don't cry...don't cry...don't cry cry cry don't don't cry."

By Zola 7

She sobs on my chest. I hush her till she felt better.

Me: should I get you water?

Alex: yes please

Me: alright I'm coming.

I kissed her forehead then took two glasses for both of them. I gave Alex then went to Gwen's room at first she doesn't open.

Finally she does and listen to the first thing she said

Gwen: I guess you understand why I didn't want you stay here.

Me: I'm deeply sorry Gwen I didn't know. Here

I gave her the glass of water, she takes it and drank all of it in one gulp.

Gwen: thanks

Me: umm can we talk?

Gwen: talk with a child.

Me: yeah

Gwen: okay (wiping tears) you can take a seat.

Me: um I don't wanna sound too forward and I hope you won't judge me. I mean I just came here yesterday ...but I think you need help.

Gwen: what? Wait...who are you to tell me that I need help.

Me: I understand the situation ma'am but my father thought me that a man doesn't lay a hand on a woman. Once he does that a deal breaker plus he's violating your rights.

Gwen: he loves me. He loves me and he will change for me.

Me: how long has he been saying that?

I brace myself trying to act strong and firm even though the situation says otherwise.

Gwen: for five years. He's a good husband I know and you're just a kid you won't understand baby. You're still young but thanks for caring. And thank you for the water.

So for five years this woman has been enduring abuse? She's strong shame. I won't settle for that shit. I know my worth.

Me: but Gwen you have a five year old child, when she's around how do you think she feels? Huh? Alex right now is coiled in a ball afraid she'll also get a beating but you let that monster control you. This doesn't affect only you Gwen. It affects everyone do you get that?

Gwen: like I said I have this under control stop being nosey. In fact get out...

Me: is he working...oh I forgot. He's not working at the moment, you're the only one supporting the family while he drinks the money away. And guess what you're okay with that. You know what dissappoints me the most is knowing that...that

man is a South African. You are from another country and yet he slaves you like this. But I'll let you be.

I got up and went outside, dialed the police number so they can come arrest this person.

Police: yello

Me: can I report a case of domestic abuse.

Police: yho it's lunch time please call after 11:00

Me: but your job is to..

Tu Tu tut call is dropped? Wow

After one hour I called again and at last they said they are coming

After an two hours of waiting I lost hope that it will ever eventually they pull up by the tavern and made the arrest.

Gwen: what's happening?

She was at the kitchen when the incident happening

Alex was also worried but somehow seemed happy.

Me: I also don't know

She ran to the van trying to speak with the police but they didn't take notice of her coz now a crowd has formed.

Good riddance.

Gwen is currently in the garden and we're in our room chilling. So I noticed Alex dressing up all cute and stuff.

Me: where are you going?

Alex: to see a Friend.

Me: mmok who's your friend?

Lex: Linda.

Me: mmhk you look good by the way.

Lex: thanks, you know we were supposed to meet at 10 am but something came up so we're meeting now

Me: ohhh ok I hope you enjoy

She applied lipstick then put in mascara.

Me: you're overdoing it babe. You're okay with your natural look.

Alex: I wanna look good you know.

Me: I think I should stick. X's girlfriend on your forehead so people can see that you're mine

We both chuckled at that. She takes her purse then applied the lipstick again.

Me: come here

Alex: for what?

I hug her from behind then kissed her cheek

Alex: thank you X.

Me: for?

Alex: for everything you have done for me.

Me: I aim to please you know

Alex: such a big ego

We sing the chorus of Big ego by Beyonce

Alex: you can sing girl.

Me: I know girl

Alex: you got an Ego!

Me: I know

I kissed her neck,

Me: I'll miss you

She's now facing me looking all kinds of gorgeous. I am blessed!

I peck her lips. She smiles in between

Me: I love you.

Alex: I love you too X

Damn I cant resist her, I smashed my lips on hers we kiss again my hand traveling down her waist she moans as I squeeze her butt repeatedly rubbing it dipping my hand on it grabbing it. I put her on the dresser then slid my finger in

Alex: mmh X

Me: yes baby

Alex: I'm gonna be late X.

Me: one round.

Alex: but babe

Me: please just two minutes.

Alex: okay better take two minutes

I hit it for 2 minutes straight till she cums. How I managed to make her ... Well let's say. If you know your thing then you are capable of doing anything.

I kiss her one last time then she applied lipstick again before leaving. I'm left bored in a house... In fact I opened this song

Bored in a house by Tyga

" Okay, I'm bored in the house and I'm in the house bored (bored)

Bored in the house and I'm in the house bored (bored)

Bored than a muhfucka in the house bored

And I'm bored than a muhfucka in the house bored

Bored in the house

Bored in the house, bored (bored)

Bored in the house"

Minutes after she left, Linda is at the gate. How did...

Something doesn't add up.

18

Aaron

I received a call from Alex while I was waiting for her on my parents car. They let me drive it for the day

Me: hey lady

Alex: where are you? I'm by the school

Me: I'm the black car. Wait a minute

I got out and saw her looking good. Her lips look so inviting

Me: hey

Alex: yeah what did you want to tell me?

Me: I'm not getting even a hug?

Alex: ohm okay

We briefly hugged, I made sure it lasts longer than it should

Alex: okay that's enough

She pulls out

Me: let's get in the car so we can talk without people over hearing our conversation.

She looks at me for some time

Alex: make this talk of yours quick.

She got in then I got down to business.

Me: so (BEEP)

I checked the message from Linda

"I'm at her house, you can tell her "

Great, I slid the phone on my pocket.

Me: so I wanted to tell you that X is cheating on you.

Alex: I don't believe you.

Me: yes it's true.

Alex: she loves me, X would never do that to me.

Me: okay then let me just take you back.

I could see she's angry so I drives back stopped in front of her house.

Me: wait before you go I have something to tell you.

I made my eyes small and charming, licking my lower lip.

Me: um for sometime I've been having these feelings for you and I've been holding them back for sometime now. I am in love with you Alex and girl I know I can treat you better than she does. I can make you feel good more than she does. Look I have a dick. A real one at that and baby I last all night

I looked at her with bedroom eyes.

Me: I can teach you more than she knows. I know that X is a virgin. Pshh what does she know? I can pleasure you, make you reach multiple orgasms in 10 minutes.

I kissed her hand while she looks at me weirdly.

Me: look we're still young, and I dig you straight plus I have money girl. I am loaded!

Alex: why don't you just tell me you want me in bed?

Me: it's not that. I mean you're hot. Attractive

gorgeous

I could see she's blushing

Me: I'm looking out for you coz I know X isn't serious about you. She's just exploring you that's it but anyway since you defend her it's fine.

Alex: Aaron I know my X would never cheat on me. You now what? I'm leaving.

She went off the car

Xena

So I and Linda were just talking, we're in the sitting room watching TV, Gwen went to town to buy some groceries. So it's just me and her, so she says that Alex and her were not gonna meet up and I'm confused. A black car stops by the gate ohh most probably it's for the neighbors.

Linda: I'm telling you she doesn't love you the way you do. Look X

Someone gets out of the car

Linda unexpectedly gets on top on me

Me: dude tf you doing?

She put finger on my mouth then brushed my boobs oh mmmm she smash her lips on mine, takes my t-shirt off and I am really turned on coz she is good! then that's when it clicked. I have a girlfriend.

"X ...is that you" Alex ? I push Linda off me.

Me: look babe I can explain.

Tears fell on her face, she is hurt and disgusted.

Alex: I can't believe this X and you Linda. You are my friend how can you do this to me. You know what get out the two of you.

Me: Alex you're being unfair right now? First you went out going to meet up with Linda and guess what? Here is Linda

Alex: and you're fucking her !

Me: I'm sorry babe I try calm her Alex: don't touch me!

Me: Alex who's car did you come off in, that black car whose car is it? Aaron's car. Yeyy

Alex: that doesn't matter X (crying) get out, the both of you.
GET OUT!

Me: once I go out that door. I'll never come back for you again. I don't keep promises but this one I'll keep it.

And with that I left.

Just like that. So my girlfriend cheated on me and I cheated on her and I don't have a place to stay. So there's no where I can go but home. You know what? I quit being lesbian. I'm gonna make my parents proud and be what they want.

Maybe it's because I'm angry or confused but it's clear that in order for them to accept me is to be normal. And you know love sucks! It doesn't matter which sexuality you are. Love sucks

PERIOD!

I'm upset. How can X do that to me? I thought she loved me. She showed all the signs of loving me all along she is doing this behind my back? Behind my back! While I just said that she'll never cheat on me, she does this? I trusted her but look now. I really don't care whether she comes back or not.

I ran to my room and cried my lungs out. Why did this happen to me. Why? I took my phone out and deleted all our pictures and her number. I know it by heart so there's no difference. Argh I loved you X. I gave you everything. I gave you love, comfort and my virginity. I regret that decision... Maybe she just wanted to sleep with me and that's it. I mean I'm not the first girl she had a deed with. Yeah she told me that she has done this before but it wasn't serious. So I'm also not "serious" to her. She proved it by making out with another girl. If I just listened to mom and not have sex I wouldn't feel so cheap. I feel like she used me then Covered it up by standing up for me.

I drown in my tears till the pillow was wet.

I'll never forgive you Xena Kabelo Mlanjana

Xena

Here goes nothing. I knocked at my homes front door. Mom opens wearing an apron, oh she's baking.

Me: hello

Mom: what do you want here ?

Me: mom I came to apologize.

Mom: mmmh come in.

She swayed then I got in.

Mom: tatakhe! Sizwe! Come see this!

I sat on the dinner table chair.

Dad and Sizwe came in the too as mom sat all smiles. I hate this but it's not like I have a choice.

Sizwe: this seems tense.

Mom: no it's not tense at all.

She slightly laughs pretending to be happy.

Mom: so Xena what did you come here for.

My hands were shivering, I'm quite afraid of the outcome of this.

Me: um mom, dad and Sizwe I am deeply sorry for my behaviour the previous day. I shouldn't have done that. Mom I

will stop dating girls because I see how bad it is. (This hurts but I try to conceal my broken heart) um can I move back in.

Mom stands up just to hug me, squeezing me tight.

Mom: good girl. Oh God is good, my prayers have been answered.

Dad: ehh Xena

mom pulls out of the hug.

Dad: just remember that, whichever decision you take. I support you. I want the best for you and if being straight makes you happy then I support you.

Sizwe: me too lil sis. I support you all the way no matter how you are. To me you're always my sister.

Me: aww thank you so much.

We fist bumped.

Mom: good girl, you always know how to put a smile on my face. I love you so much.

She kisses my cheek. Huh? What is she doing? Black parents don't go kissing their daughters cheeks. Aha mom watches too much movies.

Mom: today we are having a feast. Baby we should talk about this in church. My daughter is saved from the devil. People will

love hearing about this. I think you should also preach about it.
Don't you think ?

Dad: yes wifie that's a good idea.

They smile at each other, honestly these two are fucking. I know so I mean look at the way they look at each other.

Me: alright that's enough. I'm starving, where's food.

Mom: I'll dish up just now.

Me: no I will dish up mom.

Mom: good girl.

And so I went to the kitchen while they are talking about me.
It's not like I care.

I took out 4 plates

dished out rice on all of them. Wait we have meat. I put 3 pieces under my rice. Then dished out one piece for everyone.
Good.

I served them then I went to eat in my bedroom. Okay so far life as a straight girl has been good. Except that I miss Alex.

Alex

It's been a week since the incident happened and honestly I hate X. She's been trying to call me. Wow didn't she say that she won't ever come back? All the love I had for her is fading. I just can't deal with people like her, who does that. Aaron really helped me. Xena is very unfaithful, to think I even imagined getting married to her. I caught her kissing her, she kissed and grabbed my friend. She wasn't even trying to pull off or what. X was deep in her even her T-shirt off. And then she comes with a message like "she seduced me" excuse me! So your t-shirt flew off your body? Is that you're telling me X. She is such a womaniser, and I knew it but still feel for her for years. At least I got to be with her and we had good times and all. Maybe dating isn't for me.

Beep , I checked my WhatsApp. A message from Aaron.

"Hey you" I smiled and replied to it. Well me and Aaron are friends since the incident. It's been like a week now. We've been talking just in general. Mom doesn't know about him thou.

"Hello boo how are you doing?" I replied

"I miss talking to you" and oh I always ignore it when he says those I love you stuff.

I'm currently watching Addicted and I'm horny. I miss X

"Oh really" I replied

"Yes what are you doing?"

"Watching a movie, you?"

"I'm just came out of the shower."

"Ohk"

I ignored my phone then continue watching it.

Beep

I ignored it then it rings. Aaron pops up.

Me: hey

Aaron: can you come over?

Me: now?

Aaron: yeah I'm home alone.

Me: umm mmmm okay.

It's around 21:00 my mom is asleep. So I'll use this opportunity.

Me: okay I'm coming.

I'm so horny this movie ain't making this any better.

I went out using the window then met with him by the Jacaranda shop. We walked together so today he's not using his car huh.

Me: why are we walking?

Aaron: what do you mean?

Me: where's your car?

Aaron: ohhh it went for service in America.

I know he's lying. I'm not a kid I mean... America? Really bro.

Me: ohhh I can't wait till it comes back. It's better than X's VW Polo

Aaron: I know hey. She thinks she has it all.

Me: and she's smells horrible. Yho her armpits!

We both laugh at that

We reached his house then went to his room.

Aaron: umm about what I told you earlier. I really love you Alex.

He looked so sincere.

Aaron: please give us a chance. Please.

The way he looks so yummy makes my pants extra ...

Me: umm yeah I think we can. Although I haven't experienced dating guys I mean we can try this

My phone rings and I know it's X.

Me: hello

Xena: hey how are you doing?

Me: what do you want?

Xena: look I'm sorry about ...what happened.

Me: ohh okay.

Xena: so can you give me another chance.

Me: another chance?

Aaron starts kissing my neck

Me: stoppp (I push him playfully)

Xena: I see you moved on.

Me: yes

Xena: can we be friends at least?

Aaron just sucked my nipple. This boy doesn't listen, he did that again a moan escapes my mouth.

Xena: okay I see I'm disturbing something. Bye Alex

Me: bye X

I switched off my phone.

Me: and you come here. Wait how does it look like first?

Aaron: you wanna see it?

Me: um yeah

He took his pants off. Then

Alex

I'm really curious on seeing how a cock looks like I've never seen one in my life. He pulls his pants down then I see it. Wow! It's so huge!

Me: so that thing will get inside me?

Aaron: yes

Me: like inside?

Aaron: it will be fun don't worry.

Me: mm

I nod a little afraid.

Me: can I touch it?

Aaron: sure

He walks to me then I held it. It's big, there is no way this thing can get inside me. But I wanna explore how it happens as Aaron says. I rubbed my hand on it moving it up and down. Aaron groans as I do that.

Aaron: you can lick it just to get the taste.

I put it in my mouth then licked it like a stock sweet. I put it all of it on my mouth. Moving in and out then did it faster till some white stuff comes out. WOW! It's getting hard. After sometime doing that we start kissing. He sucks my breasts.

Me: mmmh yes

My breathing increases then he moves to my stomach then moved his lips in a ticklish manner. I let out of laugh

Then he moves down to my virgina licks it once

Aaron: are you sure you're not a virgin?

Me: yes I'm sure.

Aaron: okay thing is it your nunu looks tight but it's fine, we'll get through it together.

He went back to kissing me while fingering me. A warm sensation rashes all over my body. I shiver as he finds my G-spot my legs start shaking

Me: ahh!! Oh my goodness!!!

Aaron: good girl.

He pushes his hand further I scream in pain. But I let him continue holding on his back tightly trying to to cry. He pulls his three fingers out then I feel a hard material entering my walls

Me: stop!

Aaron: what's wrong?

Me: where are the condoms?

Aaron: condo- no baby I can't have kids. I'm infertile.

Me: are you sure?

Aaron: yes I'm sure

Me: ohh at least, continue

I pull his back on me then he hit it again. He pushes his cock in and deep. I grab on the sheets coz the pain is unbearable. I can't ...breathe

Me: awjjkkkbv oh fuck me Aaron !

He pounds in and out fast. Now the pain is better and bearable. He spans my butt pounding faster in and out in and out fast! I moan louder as he moves faster. My legs stretched wide for him. He hits my g spot I went crazy

Me: ohh mmmh hjkjdddb

Then pounds faster grabbing squeezing fingering my butt.

Me: I'm cummin! Ahhh!

He pauses ohhh that ...was ...amazing then he moves in slow again slow in and out slow then fast and fast

Aaron: oh fuck!

He pauses

Aaron: I'm cummin

He releases inside me. It doesn't matter, he can't have kids moss. Then he continues. I can't take it anymore. I can oh he changes positions and fucks me straight! Damn he knows his thing. It's been like an hour now and I can't stop having this. This is way nicer than what I'm used to. He pulls out then he puts his hand. Like a fist in ...ouh that feels good. Yes yes Aaron. He moves his hand in and out of me till I cum then he his dick on my anus hole.

Me: ahhhh!!!! Mmmh fuck.

His hand and dick moving in opposite directions on both my holes. This feels out of this world...oh my oh my yess Aaron.

After sometime we are both tired. I collapse on the side. Then he goes to take his phone and puts it on the charger. Pressed something it's not like I care about what he's doing. Wait

Me: you aren't dating anyone right?

Aaron: I'm single ready to mingle with you.

He puts the phone down then walks to me again spreading my legs. His head is shaved moss so he's like

Aaron: can I insert my head in you?

Me: your head?

Aaron: I won't insert all of it. Just the top.

Me: umm okay we can try that.

He brushes his head fist then spread my legs wide

After the deed we cuddle up, it wasn't as bad thou. I think I'm gonna like this

Aaron: let's do it again.

Me: alright

20

I woke up, my eyes heavy from crying. First person I could think of was Alex. I love her so much but she chose to move so quick without me. All I can say is that I'm not coping, I need her in my life. I miss you Lexy. I love you so much.

I got up strapped naked then took a long hot bath. I try to do this everyday just to relax my mind. Then in the evening I take a shower before I go to sleep. Hygiene is really important fam and I take it seriously.

When the water is cold I got out then brushed my teeth, brushing my tongue, tooth at the back. And I'm done with that ... I walked to my closet taking an already ironed T-shirt and then sweatpants. My t-shirts are always ironed, I make sure after washing my clothes I do ironing.

Then I use Nivea products coz they have that manly smell you feel me then put Nivea 48 hour roll on.

Finally wearing my clothes ohh I forgot to put a perfume, I take my English blazer perfume ... the boy is good and well done. I stared at myself at the mirror. I look good! Dang

I went downstairs and finding Sizwe eating in a hurry

Me: hey brother

Sizwe: hello

I take rice crispys' and made myself some.

Me: I am so hungry God I feel like eating a lion. Wait no Its I feel like a hungry lion, yeah that's right.

Sizwe isn't really listening to me he's staring at his phone while eating.

Sizwe: wow!! Unesibindi lomntana (This girl has a liver) I think I know her from somewhere.

Me: let me see

I take a look at his phone. Wow who did this video? Wow ...wait.

Sizwe: eh let me leave you with it while I take my 3 pieces from last night for my lunch.

I take a look at the video closely. Is this ... Alex? And the boy is pixilated like his face is covered but Alex is visible. I feel my world being shattered. A fist? In her v... My heart broken to pieces. How can she do this to us. I somehow thought that we'll get together but this? She's moaning loud and it hurts me so bad! This hurts... When was this done?... Wait yesterday she was with some person I don't know. Maybe her new boyfriend did this. I switched off the video coz I couldn't continue watching a head inserted in her v walls.

Sizwe: Kabelo where is my meat?

Tears prickled down my cheeks. I can't believe it. My sweet innocent looking Alex is trending with a sex tape at that.

Sizwe: are you okay?

Tears voluntarily fall flooding down my cheeks

Sizwe gives me a warm embrace while I sobbed on his chest. My out bursts turned to screams of pain and agony

Me: I loved her

Sizwe: shhh

Me: I loved her!

Sizwe: it's gonna be okay.

Me: when? (Sobbing, having hiccups, wiping tears that are replaced by others, then I screamed out of pain. Fall on my knees. Poured out a pool of tears.)

"Nguban lowo?!(whose that)" Mom said walking down the steps. Mom is shocked when she sees me then she also hugs me.

Mom: what happened my baby?

Me: she hurt me ma. She hurt me.

Sizwe: I'm sorry Xena

I cried on my mother's shoulder and she embraces me in a warm motherly hug brushing my hair in a soothing manner.

Mom: don't worry my baby. Just leave her, you know your worth that's what I taught you.

Sizwe gives me water as I cool down

Sizwe: I'll have to go to work now or else I'll be late. I'll check up on you Xena, I love you

He kissed my cheek, with that he leaves.

Mom makes me tea and something to eat. That is weird but anyways I eat.

Mom: I bought you a dress to wear on Sunday. Would you like to see it?

I nod wiping my tears, I'm not wearing a dress thou

Mom: I thought I should since now you are back in your senses. And you should try wearing more girly clothes you know. I'm proud of you and that girl deserves to rot in hell for making you cry. Now wipe your tears, after you finish I'll be upstairs with the dress. Okay?

I nod, I mean ... I know I'm emotional rn but I don't have a choice. I have to please my mom. To think yesterday I almost let them down by asking a second chance to Alex. Honestly I still love her

I am standing in front of the mirror, eish this dress. I pull it down below my knee, it goes back up. It's one of those tight hugging dress, my hips are all out. I feel so exposed and naked.

Me: I can't do this mom.

Mom: you look nice

iyakufanela.

Me: I'm not comfortable in this

Mom: nonsense you're wearing this dress on Sunday. (Taking a short skirt) wear this.

Me: mom

I look at her with concerned eyes but she's busy taking out more feminine clothes. I feel like puking, I'm nauseous, all these clothes are quite revealing to me. I know kids at church wear skirts but I don't do that. At our church were allowed to wear trousers and I've always worn them. I've never worn a dress well that's based on what I remember and this is different. I can't bring myself to look like this clown I am. I can't even stare at the mirror for too long.

Me: mom please.

Mom: I gave birth to a girl and you will wear this dress. Xena
this is my house and my rules

Me: but this is my body

Mom: that body comes from me. Let me take a picture, say
cheese

Me: (mumbling) cheese

She takes the photo

Mom: don't look so grumpy I want a real smile.

I try to pull a realistic fake smile she smiles staring at the pic

Mom: you are beautiful

Then she hugs me as I roll my eyes

After taking off the dress while she's staring at me! I wear my t-
shirt and pants. Phew I feel a lot better and comfortable

Mom: Xena

Me: mom(mumbling)

Mom: I need to know something.

Me: yes?

Mom: when you werelike having intercourse with her did
you use a condom?

What is mom asking me?

Mom: I know this is awkward but I want to make sure that you aren't infected. There are STI's, HIV for instance and I'm looking out for you, you know.

Mom is a pastor's wife and honestly I least expected this question. I don't know how to answer it.

Mom: look I know that you had intercourse with her and you know if you pray God will forgive your sins. You can be a born again virgin and give pleasure your man once you're married which is Aaron. I know you love each other so much but you won't accept it. So tell me did you use protection?

Me: ummm n..o no I didn't

Thing is at school were taught about how we should put these condoms and stuff but...they don't explain how lesbians should do it. What should they use. Even the topic is tabbo. They don't talk how lesbians have relationship and all that. It's always a girl and a boy so one wouldn't be that educated when it comes to protection and stuff like that...you feel me?

Mom: oh you didn't think about STI's, you just went for it?

I didn't respond to that.

Mom: come (taking her car keys then exits the room)

I followed her to her car. I don't even know where I'm going.
I'm scared like I don't know her intentions or what?

She stops next to a clinic then we got in. The nurses are having tea.

Nurse: yho sise lunchin yibani nilinda. (We're still at lunch, please wait)

Another nurse: it's the pastor's wife.

Nurse: oh I'm so sorry.

Putting her tea down then attends us.

So it takes privilege to be attended quickly. Interesting

We're in some room, I sit on that bed thing.

Mom: we came for HIV testing and I want you to put her on contraceptives on her

Me: mom...

Nurse: hey kid Are you sexuality active?

I don't answer that

Nurse: answer

Me: no

Mom: she's lying. Tell the truth Kabelo

I sigh then in a whisper,

Me: yes

Nurse: I can't hear you.

Me: yes I am

My cheeks burn with embarrassment.

Nurse: ohh so we'll first test for HIV, pregnancy

Me: I'm not pregnant!

Nurse: and then give you injection that will last for three months. First I have to know if you are in your periods or not.

I'm so embarrassed, my face feels so hot.

Me: I'm afraid I can't discuss that with you.

Nurse: the information is kept confidential.

Me: yes I'm on my periods

I look far away after saying that. I'm so embarrassed! Can this end.

Nurse: okay so you'll have to come back when your periods ended okay?

Me: yes.

They do all the test, I'm HIV negative, I'm so relieved! Thing is I was afraid. I'm not pregnant. Obviously.

After that awkward session the nurse that was attending starts talking with other nurses in a low voice. They seem shocked after she said something I didn't hear.

Anyways we go back home

Alex

I woke next to nothing. Where is Aaron? Wait the sun is out. I'm not home. I need to get out of here fast. I looked at the clock. It's 10: 00 am !!!!! Yho mom noticed I am gone. What am I gonna do?

Yhooo mtchewww

I got up in speed my whole body feels electrified then it starts throbbing. I try to get up ... Ouch I can't walk properly. I balanced myself with furniture as I pick my clothes up.

Aaron comes out of the bathroom in a towel.

Aaron: hey

Me: take me home

Aaron: can we have another round?

Me: no! Take me home.

Aaron: my car is in America for service so you can walk yourself out.

I see he's serious. So I dressed up and when I went downstairs, Linda is in a lingerie. She covers up once she sees me.

Linda: where is Aaron?

Me: what's happening?

Linda: you guys did it good by the way. Girl you were moaning good in that video.

Me: what video?

Linda: nevermind

Me: what is your purpose? Why are you here?

Linda: to give Aaron all this! (Shaking her body)

Me: he's taken. Aaron is mine!

Linda: in your dreams.

In just minutes my hand is on her throat, I'm kicking her stomach hard. Then got in top of her

Me: Aaron is my man

"What's happening here." That is Aaron

He pulls me off her

Me: leave me alone!

I try kicking her while Aaron has my arms locked on his.

Aaron: stop beating my girlfriend!

Me: which girlfriend?

Aaron: Linda is now my girlfriend/ hook up. And you. I was just using you now get out of my house

Me: what? (Blinked)

Aaron: get out black girl. You can't even Shang properly, I mean look at you. Black pussy ... I don't deal with black pussies. I did this for X. Now get out

Wow!

I got out crying how can he be so cruel to me. I can't believe this. This is the shortest relationship I've ever had.

I cried walking home, people giving me nasty stares whats happening today. I got home, mom was in the kitchen. I didn't even greet I went straight to my bed crying my lungs out.

Mom Knocking at my door, ignoring the knock as I doze off in tears

Later in the day I went through my Facebook. People tagged me in some video. So I watched it. Wait...that's me and Aaron. Why is Aaron not visible but I'm visible.

"Fuck me Aaron" that was me saying that. How can he do this to me? How can he. I called him. My number is blocked! My future is ruined! Comments come in flooding. My inbox is filled. This is bad! I called X.

Xena: hello.

Me: Xena I just found out that Aaron was playing a trick on us. He was working with Linda all the time just imagine babe. They were trying to break us but I know we are unbreakable.

Tu Tu Tu

Did she just dropped the call on me?

I called her again and it doesn't go through.

Mom walks in my room.

Mom: I've been knocking here, what's happening with you?

I don't think mom saw the video. She's old fashioned and doesn't have a phone. Mom: where were you?

Me: not now please mom. Mom: take off your clothes.

Me: why? Mom: I'm performing a virginity test on you.

21

My phone rings saving the day. Phew just imagine if she actually did perform that. She'd die. X? She's calling me. Why? Before answering mom disturbs me.

Mom: hey where were you?

Me: I was with X mom. I'm sorry I just missed her so much

Mom: why didn't you tell me?

I answered the phone.

Me: hey you. (Biting my lip)

Xena: hey Alex.

Me: I was just telling mom how I missed you.

Xena: oh

Me: yeah, (I walked outside) X can you please forgive me. Can we go back to how things were I miss you so much. I love you

Xena: I think I did a mistake by calling you.

Me: why did you call? I know you love X

Line goes silent

Me: X please talk.

She breathed out heavily.

Xena: can meet? I'll pick you up then we can maybe talk.

Me: awwww Xena I knew it.

Call dropped. Okay?

I can't go back inside mom is gonna do a test on me. You know what. Let me just tell her I lost my virginity

I walked inside.

Me: mom

Mom: I'm ready take your clothes off.

Me: please don't be mad.

Mom: hurry up. The neighbors were talking about you being a loose girl.

Me: mom I lost my virginity to Xena.

Mom: what?!

Me: I'm sorry (tears falling on my eyes);

Mom: how did...why did you do that?

At this point I'm crying literary I don't know what to say. Tears are just falling down on my cheeks.

Mom: I'm going to see Xena now!

She went out fuming while I cried my lungs out. Sobbing, crying for everything.

Xena

I'm currently at the dinner table, so mom had this horrible plan of inviting Aaron over. Yep she did that.

Mom: you two would make a cute couple.

Dad: true.

Aaron: I have something to say actually.

Dad: sure what is it?

Aaron: (looks at me) Xena Kabelo Mlanjana, ever since this year started. I had this feeling in my heart that I can't describe.

We've been friends since primary, you were my first friend, you stood up for me when I was bullied. You been so good to me X.

You've been a sister that I never had and you showed kindness all the time. We laughed, cried and grew together. I know you

in and out. It's only now I realize how much I love you. I Aaron

Peter ask you to be my girlfriend.

A knock disturbs us.

Me: I'll get it

I walk to the door and Gwen is standing there.

Gwen: what did you do to my daughter?

Me: excuse me?

She pushed her way through

Gwen: I want to talk to your parents.

Mom: Kabela who is this?

Me: Alex's mother.

Mom: yerrr that child of yours has no manners how dare she hurt my daughter like this!

Me: mom

Gwen: this child of yours didn't tell you she broke my daughter's virginity. My innocent angel. Just yesterday this girl took my daughter

my Alex went all out to see this girl. You know Alex doesn't go opening legs for everyone but your slut deflowered her!

Mom: whose a slut? My daughter is a saint! Have you seen the video of your daughter trending on Facebook! In case you haven't seen it.

Mom presses her phone then plays the video. Gwen is shocked starts breathing heavy then boom fainted.

Dad: what just happened.

Sizwe: put water her.

After water was slashed on her she's lays confused and the rents take over. I mean we have two Doctors in the house. After sometime she asks to go without even apologizing. Okay I admit, I took her virginity but it was her choice not mine.

Mom forces the dinner to continue after that like nothing happened.

Mom: we're waiting for your answer. Just say yes already.

Me: it's a no. I won't ever see Aaron as a boyfriend mom. I don't like him that way.

Aaron: but you saw what happened to Alex.

Me: yes that doesn't mean that I love you. I'll never be yours Aaron and I'm not ashamed to say it in front of my family. You know what? I'm done eating.

I pushed my plate full of meat. Then went to my room, tears steamed down my cheeks. I hate my life. I hate it with Passion!

In the morning I went for a jog at the school grounds. It's kinda dark it's not like I'm afraid of darkness. I ran 10 rounds in the field then sat on the benches trying to cool down, started

thinking. I could feel that there are people around...mara nah I'm paranoid, it's dark even though there are lights. I took a sip from my water catching my breath thinking about today's date with Alex. I really don't know what to say to her. I just need to see, get the feel of how she is doing and all that. She hurt me

Yes

But I love her. I know I sound stupid right

"BOO!!" The Franz just appeared out of no where. It's 5 boys and then Aaron is their leader and he's among them.

Me: hey

Aaron: where are you back up guys? Liam and Caleb ain't here to save the day.

Me: pshh

Jay: she's afraid

Aaron comes close to me with a knife.

Aaron: today I'm gonna teach you how to be a woman.

Me: what are you talking about ...don't !

The knife on my cheek.

Aaron: boys do the work

I tried pushing them but they attacked me first. Grabbing my clothes off then they put me on the ground...like the soil... I try to free myself.

Me: Aaron please. Don't do this.

Aaron tears my pants off then spreads my legs.

Me: Aaron please, Help!!!

He positioned the knife on my eye.

Aaron: if you make noise. Your eye is out.

Me: please don't do it Aaron p-

He enters me,

Me: noo!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

He has his man hold my legs as he damages me.

Me: noo! Stop !!! Please stop!

He's pounding fast with no mercy.

Aaron: it's your turn Jay

Everyone takes their turn on me then they leave me there full of blood but before they leave

Aaron: once you tell your parents. You're dead! In fact welcome to womanhood.

Once they are done, I'm lying there lifeless. It's hard to get up but I managed to drag myself home. When I got in my room I went straight to the shower. Scrubbed myself for a long time. I feel so dirty, the more I wash it's like I'm getting more dirtier, I could feel Aaron entering me. I try to push that thought away but the event keeps playing more and more.

I let the water fall in my hair crying. Maybe if I didn't go jogging this wouldn't have happened. Maybe I agreed to be his girlfriend he wouldn't have raped me. Maybe if I didn't wear sports shorts he wouldn't force himself on me. It's my fault, I drove him to this, it's my fault

I scrubbed my bottom for 20 minutes trying to remove their filthy smell. After an hour I took a bath soaked myself then sank to the bottom. Water covering my face I can't breathe but this feels better than the pain of living. I brought this on myself I regret myself so bad. Water fills my nostrils, I try to cough, excruciating pain of water entering my body. I heaved up taking deep breath no I can't. This is pain. I got out coughing the water out, I'm never doing that again.

"Xena" mom says like she's in my bedroom. She enters the bathroom and finds me sitting in the toilet seat trying to regain my breathing.

Mom: what happened here?

Me: I fell on the floor.

She seems sad, it's like she has a heavy burden on her shoulders.

Mom: I'm sorry.

Me: it's okay.

Mom: alright ...I came with bad news.

Me: yes

Mom: Aaron left the town.

Me: Good ridence

Mom: your best friend left and you tell me you are happy.

Tears fall on my face. I want to tell her

Me: I'm sorry mom.

I must always be a good kid

Mom: good. Your lunch is downstairs.

Me: great.

She rolls her eyes then left me

I start crying all over.

It's been a week now and I can't bring myself to tell anyone about this. I try to tell myself that I should forget this but I can't.

I took my evening shower then wore my PJs went downstairs for supper coz I'm hungry. I didn't eat in the morning, truth is eating in the morning is a no Go area for me. Although I sometimes eat but it's not something I prefer. Okay I think I'm lying to myself. I eat anytime but mostly during the day coz I like sleeping till late so yeah I don't eat in the morning. I'm crazy. I hope y'all know me by know.

Dad: hello Xena

My father says as I sat at the dinner table

Me: hey

Dad: you seem off

Sizwe isn't around coz he's working nightshirt today.

Me: I'm okay

I faked a smile. As sweet as dad can be, I can't bring myself to tell him.

Mom: I've noticed too, your eating habits changed too. What's happening?

Tears threaten to fall. Mom hugs me

Mom: come here

She seems so understanding and patient

Mom: tell mommy what's bothering you.

Me: can I tell you in private.

She nods then we go to the study.

Me: so I... When.... (Sighs)

Mom: take your time

Me: umm mom

Mom: yes

Tears literally fell I can't control it.

Me: umm Aaron ...

Mom: you love him. Aww baby I'm so proud of you. Let me call his mother

Me: he raped me !

She stops dialing her phone and looks at me with a pulled face full of shock.

Mom: what?

Me: I was raped by Aaron and his friends mom.

Mom: stop lying Xena

She pushed me I hit the wall hard

Mom: why are you lying. Just because you don't love him it doesn't mean you should put a bad name on someone. What's wrong with you. You know what! I'm calling Aaron right now!

She presses something on her phone

Mom: it's ringing

I was in tears more than I have ever cried. What's wrong with mom?

Mom: hello Aaron. Did you rape Xena?

She put it on loud speaker.

Aaron: no what? Did Xena tell you that?

Mom: yes

Me: (whispering) mom

Aaron: as embarrassing as this may sound. Xena came to my house one day and she seduced me. So I rejected her coz I already had a girlfriend. That's what happened.

Me: liar!!!! You are lying Aaron

Aaron: I get that you are hurting Xena but you rejected me. What was I suppose to do?

Me: I HATE YOU

Aaron: and I loved you. I'm sorry I moved on with my life.

Me: I can't take this.

I ran to my room and cried more. Everything is just bad. I slept in tears, my pillow completely wet

Following morning

it's the day Matric results come out. Honestly I slept normal hours, I didn't wait for them. I know I passed

A call from Alex woke me up.

Me: what do you want ?

Alex: congratulations you got 4 distinctions

Me: really ...thanks.

Oh were not in speaking terms, I last talked to her that day. Like on the phone that day we never met up. Coz I was ...you know.

Me: I bet you got 7 distinctions!

Alex: yes I did but I didn't pass the way I wanted to. Just imagine getting only two 90 something. I wanted to get at least 95 % and above in all my subjects.

"Xennnaaaa!!!!!!!!!!!!!! Kabelo come see this!!!!!!!!!!!!!!" And that's mom for you.

Me: I have to attend to that. Bye

Alex: Xena can I have a second chance.

Me: I'm afraid it's a no Alex. I wish the best of luck. I'm sorry this is the end of the road for you (I said in the tone they use in those Competitions)

Alex: not even h-

Me: you have insufficient airtime to make a call. Please load airtime. Tu Tu tu

I switched my phone off then went downstairs. My whole family is staring at the newspaper.

Mom: 4 distinctions! Good girl.

She buried me in a hug

Sizwe continued reading

Sizwe: Distinction in Xhosa, English, L.O and Mathematics! I'm so proud of you sis

He also hugged me.

I'm so happy, right then I get notifications (message) from UP, UJ and Wits saying I'm accepted.

Me: mom look at this.

Mom: you're going to Wits

Me: I think I'm choosing UP. It's the best ma

Mom: you going to Wits end of story.

Okay it's not like I have a say.

Mom: we are the ones who are going to pay moss. NSFAS won't fund you because you are from a rich family and we don't mind paying for you.

Me: it's fine mom.

Mom: Great, even your brother went to Wits

Sizwe: you'll love it KB like that place is full of vibe. Plus its in Johannesburg. The city of gold

I hear the door close and dad just entered.

Dad: X I heard the news

He gives me keys

no way.

I went out and Mercedes Benz C Class a grey one parked on the driveway

Dad: congratulations!

I attacked him with a hug. He spins me around and I'm laughing something I haven't done in a long time.

Me: thank you so much dad.

Dad: you deserve it.

Wow let me take it for a spin

Me: Sizwe let's go!

He's in a leave so he's around and dad is working night shift today and mom is on holiday since students are also on holiday.

So I have two cars. Isn't this great! We drive around, I can't complain. It's a good car. I can't wait to drive it to school. I leave the Polo here then take the new one.

In the evening we were having dinner at spur, celebrating my results. I got a message from Liam.

"Hey dude, congratulations. I'd like to let you know that Alex committed suicide" no explanation no what. WOW that's unexpected. I remembered that today most students went to take statements so maybe the teasing was too much.

I can't believe it. I just talked to her this morning and now she's no longer with us. On the other side I understand coz her video went viral. Like world wide. It's put up in websites, it's crazy. And it's quite sad that a person dies at that kind of note.

- .
- .
- .
- .

2 weeks later

I'm standing in front of university of the Witwatersrand, Johannesburg.

All the way from Durban in Umhlanga

We used two cars which is mine and my dad's car. Mainly because I had a lot of stuff. I'll be staying in a Res instead of off campus. I want to be closer to everything well also my parents choice.

Lately I've been in deep thoughts of my situation. You know rape... Ever since I told mom. I never talked about it again. So that is it. It's buried in a coffin and I won't ever bother myself to talk about it.

I can't wait to see what this place has in-store of me.

Xena Kabelo Mlanjana, welcome to the city of Gold.

23

It's orientation week. Well it's quite boring coz I miss home, I've never been away from home and that transition is quite hard to accept. I miss the food cooked at home. I miss eating as many chicken pieces I want. I miss my dog (pet) I miss my room. I just miss everything except how controlling my parents can be.

We're currently being showed the campus, your lecture halls, cafeteria, gym, dining hall, departments. Basically everything there is to know about the surroundings and then later on we'll have to go to monument to attend a Speech that will be made by the VC.

Friends? I haven't made any friends yet. I don't think I'll make any friends by the look of things. I miss Caleb and Liam... After my day we usually video call each other. They chose UKZN, where my mom lectures so it's just me here. Well also a few people from school not my class thou

Well it's been a "so not great orientation week" and tomorrow is our day first day of lectures. Dude just imagine from being a big fish to being a small fish. I was well known at school and now I have to start afresh

Later in the day I received a call from mom.

Me: hello mama

Mom: hello baby unjani?

Me: I'm good I guess.

Mom: okay... How is the place so far?

Me: pretty good.

Mom: mm okay Ker ufunde apho ungadlalinge mali yam (please study, don't at with my money)

Me: I will ma

Mom: remember the goal Xena. When you graduate I want to see a doctor.

Although I wanna be a musician I agreed with all she said because it's the "goal". We don't wanna disappoint now, at least I've tried to keep up and be the person they want for a month. I can do this. Come on Xena, you're better than this.

Mom: I'm proud of you baby. Please don't disappoint.

Me: I won't, I'll do my best ma.

Mom: good. You know Xena, in whatever you do. Do not copy what your friends do, chose friends wisely. If they drink don't be influenced, even if they smoke. I know you don't do these things and you've been listening please continue doing that. Will you do that for me?

Me: yes mom.

That's easy, I mean I've never drank or smoked before so ...I wouldn't start now. Right? ...right.

Mom: and when you come back it would be lovely if you bring us your husband

I chuckled at that.

Me: I'm here trina study and you (slightly laughing) my mother is encouraging me to get a man

Mom: yes, you're old enough. Plus it could clear the confusion of your sexuality. You see? But don't have intercourse with him you wanna wait till marriage.

Me: of course ma.

Mom: if he asks for sex what do you say?

Me: I'm not ready, can we wait till marriage.

Mom: that's my girl. Now behave yourself okay

Me: yes mom.

Mom: I love Xena don't ever forget that.

Me: yeah I wont

Mom: I hope you have a good evening neh I'm going to sleep now.

Me: good night ma

Mom: good night baby

Call dropped.

Following day, beginning of February 2016 and first day of lectures

So I have a single room, I don't have a roommate which means the fees for me are a little more higher. Tertiary education is expensive guys like if you come here, just make sure you have + (-) 300 000 for your whole degree or a some type of funding coz wow we pay burnt money(imali etshisiweyo). Currently there this thing going on Fees must Fall. Some students like NSFAS students who had an outstanding balance from last year were chased out of Res and school even. Just imagine it's not even their fault that happened. Honestly I'm scared coz the SRC is trying to fix this but on the other side the university officials don't wanna hear anything. They want their money, it's not like they are not gonna get it. Dude some students even slept outside in the cold. Just imagine your parents know that you're in varsity, living in a Res yet the truth is you were chased like a

dog. It really hurts shame worse the fees are escalating every year and yet this happens. Shame I'm grateful that this won't ever happen to me. It won't happen to me right? ...right.

I took a shower did all the Hygiene routine.

Put an exam pad, highlighters and pen on my bag.

I walked to class...wait where is this building again? I'm literally walking around trying to remember. I walked in this other building yeah I think it's this one. I got in some room more like seminar room.

Me: hello

These people look old! Dang.

Anyways sat down, took my exam pad and my 10 highlighters

After a few minutes some lady walked in and rubbed the white board.

Lady: right I guess we can start now.

People nod.

Lady: good morning first of all.

I wrote on my notes "she said good morning" (guys when it's first Day in varsity you take everything serious, like yho when I

look back now I'm like....why did I ...I mean thats not even notes ha ha anyways back to the story)

Lady: so we'll be discussing about ways to control these riots and the Fees must fall problem that have been going on. The VC is in his way, he'll join us at 09: 45

What? what is this class about? I was suppose to attend a phycology class what is she talking about

Lady: are you okay, (she's looking at me) yes you at the back.

Me: umm is this the Phycology class?

Lady: no dear this is a staff meeting.

Me: oh

Lady: yes.

Me: shit umm

I took my things then the lady directed me to this class. It happens its in another building. I'm so domed. I try walk as fast as I can. At last I got in and the class is big!!! Like the lecture hall has 500+ students I wonder how I'll get to hear the lecturer talking.

I close the door hard, drawing attention not by choice thou, some people looked at me. The lecturer shifts her eyes to me too, giving me the "you're late look"

Lecturer: you see people like that boy who just walked in. I won't deal with late comers thus I'll be locking the doors 5 minutes after lecturer started.

She gives me a brief warning look and as I walk I'm starring her beauty. She is stunning! I never thought there would be a person good looking as that one. She then turns writing what she just said on the white board. Her ass!!! Damn. If she wasn't my lecturer definitely I would be within. Fuck my parents. I'm sorry rents.

I take a seat next to some boys/ cheese boy looking guys and then on my other side is this scary looking guy with a scar on his eye. Yhuu.

"You're lucky wena" I looked to see this boy next to me talking to me.

Me: Why?

"She is so cruel. Well last year she was teaching us. " The other boy was watching soccer from You Tube not even bothering with what was happening in class.

Me: oh so you're repeating this course?

Boy: yeah. I'm Mandla by the way, short for Siphamandla.

Me: ohkay I'm KB short for Kabelo

Mandla: and this is Fred (soccer guy) and this (scared guy) is Scar. Coz he has a scar.

Me: oh okay nice to meet you guys

"Hey you boy can't you shut up! What's your name?" say the lecturer.

Students all turned to me. Yho guys when I say students like staring this is what I'm talking about. I like being center of attention neh but not this way. 500+ students looking at me! No I can't deal.

Me: I'm Kabelo

Lecturer: behave Kabelo

I could see she was angry and honestly it makes her so attractive. I'm not attracted to her. No I can't be attracted to anyone coz I was raped. If I move on now it's more like I'm a slut or something. This is crazy who on earth would love someone who was raped. No one. I don't think there would be someone who would be capable of loving me.

"Alright class that the end of the lecturer, see you on Tomorrow." so I just got in five minutes ago and now it's the end. Worse I heard nothing coz these boys were busy making noise.

Mandla: Cell biology is the next class right.

I checked my timetable.

Me: yep

We all walked together with the scared guy too. Guys this person is scary worse he's not even talking, making him more intimidating.

We got to the next class. I tried to be the serious kid. I left them then went to seat in the front row asking questions. Being the good kid you feel.

I'm doing all of this for my parents. I remind myself once again.

24

After classes I went back to my room and took a long nap coz I was tired.

My alarm rang for Dining hall, we have a specific time frame to eat so yep. It's that. I went to the DH and guess who I found? Mandla, Scar and Fred. So they also eat here

Mandla: hey you.

Me: hi

Mandla: I see we can't stay away from each other

Fred: don't mind him, he's crazy.

Not knowing what to say I just nod. Scar was on his phone as we went to sit at a table.

Me: so your friend(pointing Scar) doesn't talk.

Mandla: he is Deaf.

Scar: tsek Mandla

They bust out laughing. I kinda join in too

Scar: (looks at me) what are you laughing at?

The table is suddenly filled with silence. He's looking at me with a deadly stare.

Me: I was...

Scar: can't talk now huh?

Me: I a-

They all bust out laughing and here am I confused.

Scar: I'm messing with you.

Mandla: let's her official.

Scar: welcome to our squad.

Fred: cheers to that.

I half laughed, I'm not even sure whether I should really laugh or what.

We indulge in our food, talking about random stuff.

Fred: oh she bores me.

Mandla: you mean Isiphile.

Me: who is Isiphile?

Mandla: Psychology lecturer. She always tries to be all strict.

Fred: don't forget the way she blinks dude. I don't get why ladies put lashes on top of lashes. Nails on top of nails. Hair on top of hair

Advertisement

what that thing called?

Scar: weave. My girlfriend recently bought a Brazilian weave and honestly I don't get it too you know.

Me: it's a preference I think.

Mandla: you're a girl maybe you can explain this to us.

Scar: this is a guy can't you see.

Me: I'm girl dude.

Scar: my bad.

Fred: yeah KB explain to us, talk on behalf of the other girls.

Me: I don't know guys. I'm not into make up and stuff.

Mandla: I'm not surprised.

After supper we all went out, turns out these guys have cars, J wagan dude... You know how expensive

car is. So we're chilling by Res while Scar takes a cigarette and starts smoking, not that I have a problem with it. They all share the same cigger, I don't know why coz has more on his pocket.

Scar: what some?

Me: no thanks I'm cool.

Fred: you don't smoke?

Me: I don't smoke I don't drink.

They look at each other weirdly then burst out laughing. These people laugh at everything but honestly they are so cool. Although they see me as this weird person for not doing these things. I don't really mind cause I got a lot of that back in high school.

Fred: don't you wanna try?

Me: no

Mandla: you're weird.

Me: I know

Scar: I like this girl.

Mandla: she's so Innocent. This is gonna be our lil baby sister guys.

He hangs his left arm on my shoulder

Fred: she's so cute.

He touches my cheek caressing it

Me: tsek tsek

Laughter booms in the vicinity. I'm having such a good time and it's not even an event or anything it's just the vibe these guys bring. I love them already. Scars phone rings

Scar: hello... (Looks at Mandla) sure we're coming right now.

Mandla: another job?

Scar: yeah there is a problem and we have to attend it now.

Mandla: see you later KB

Fred: let's walk her to her Res first

Mandla: Fred we don't have time.

Fred: it's dangerous out here.

They sulk eventually they walk me, it's not even that far and with that. They are gone.

25

Its been a 3 weeks now and things have been great except the riots have been getting worse. It's possible that everyone will evacuate Res . Studies seem like they will be cancelled also, we've been having cancelled lectures, cancelled tutorials, today's lecture wasn't cancelled thou. At least my parents got me a private tutor starting from this week for each module I do so I can get assistance where I need it,. Tutors are expensive but there was no choice, if on my first year this is how things will be then I have to make other alternatives to make sure I pass.

First lecture today is psychology. I'm excited honestly, as wrong as it sounds I have a crush on my lecturer (Isiphile). I hope it disappears soon.

My phone rings just when I exited my room. It's mom

Me: hey

Mom: hello baby are you okay. I saw what is happening at your school on TV.

Me: I'm good ma.

Mom: did you talk to your tutors?

Me: yes

Mom: alright my baby. Xena remember when you come back I want distinctions you hear me.

How do I tell her I got 12% on my first Cell Bio test.

Me: yes mom

Mom: are you studying or you're playing?

Me: I'm studying ma.

Mom: ohh so tell me. Have you found a man?

Me: not yet.

Mom: when are you getting one?

Me: mom I'll call you back. I have a class now.

I dropped the call stressed out. So this is what happened. Moss in high school I used to study the day before the test or in morning and still get over sixty percent. I did that with this test and got 12% . Most of the stuff we were taught was the same as grade 12 not exactly the same but quite similar so I was like. I know this stuff kanti the stuff knows me . Look at me now, I've never got this mark in my life and I'm so disappointed in myself. I can't even face talking to my dad. He is so proud that her only daughter who passed with distinctions is in varsity and is still a top achiever.

One thing I've learnt about this place is that. Lecturers do not care about you. There is no spoon feeding here. I miss grade 12, at this point I'm willing to repeat that grade. Listen I'd repeat that grade over and over again coz it was simple. I don't know what I've signed up for. Like I really don't know shame, the course is chowing. That's all I can say.

I got in the lecture hall and sat next to Mandla

Me: hey

Mandla: hi

The lecture hall seems empty today. I don't know what's happening with this class. First day of school it was so full and now it's empty but when we're writing a test

Dude

I'm like where did this people come from? I'm sure some of you can relate. It's really fascinating, I don't know why I'm always surprised.

Me: you seem sad, what up.

Mandla: I was almost academically excluded because I didn't pay my outstanding fees.

Wow I really didn't think that someone I know can be affected by this. I don't even know what to say.

Me: I'm sorry.

Mandla: it's okay KB it's fine

Me: where is Scar and Fred?

Mandla: I left them sleeping.

Me: oh okay.

Mandla: they went out clubbing yesterday. I just so wish I was them sometimes.

Me: why? I mean you're cool

Mandla: Scar is loaded. When I say loaded I mean loaded. He owns the building we reside in and Fred inherited his father's money, and then there is me. A boy from dusty Streets of Mqanduli

in the Eastern Cape from one room house.

"Alright class" I shifted my eyes to the front. Isiphile (lecturer) was looking straight at us. She's been doing that a lot lately. I don't want to seem as if I'm attracted to her or what. I just play it cool. On the other side mom is nagging about getting a man.

Isiphile: alright class today we are dealing with cognitive impairment. Who can tell me what the word cognitive means.

Some girl who always answers raise her hand up.

Isi: yes (pointing at her)

All eyes on her, speaking in such a big class, with people staring is nerve racking. Serious shame. The girl answers with fluent English like she was born by whites. Also another reason making me not speak. I'm afraid of what people will think of the way I speak. When you speak in this class make sure your English is on point. What you're saying is correct. Don't give one word answers be more like you're debating, have passion and be sure of what you're saying. What I'm saying, from my "observation" you must be perfect, coz everyone answering so far is.

And I'm not perfect so I don't answer.

Isi: what about you Kabelo?

I look at the back.

Isi: I believe there's only one Kabelo Mlanjana in this class.

Not believing I pointed my chest

Me: me?

Isi: yes you.

Me: ummm(uGeorge wabaleka)

I literally became tongue tied. Isiphile flicks her lashes looking at me in anticipation.

I didn't answer that, I kept quiet till she went on someone else.

Towards the end of the lecture some kid came late then came on our row.

I continued listening, not exactly listening I was staring at her body as she moves and talks.

Someone taps my shoulder.

Kid: move away from this chair.

Me: why? (Slightly laughing)

Kid: I always sit on this chair.

Me: dude stop being a dick.

I continued listening. He taps me again I punched his face.

Me: leave me alone.

I felt a hot slap on my face. Shit this guy thinks he can defeat me. I kicked his stomach he crunches, threw punches on his face, got on top of him beating him so harsh with no mercy. All the anger of what happened to me poured out through fists and kicks. I beat him pouring out the frustration of the rape, remembering that day. Hitting him hard on his face.

Isi: heyy stop

People were now watching

Isiphile dragged us out. I didn't want to stop, and people inside made a loud noise. Talking , panicking.

Isi: what was that?

Me: he started it.

Isi: and you (to the kid) why did you beat this boy up.

Okay so she think I'm a boy.

Isi: the two of you. You need consulting. You are adults and you behave like this? Kabelo you see the damage you did on him

He was bleeding like for real for real. I didn't think I'd do this. I regret myself. Then the kid coughed up blood.

Isi: I'm taking you to disciplinary hearing . Especially you Kabelo
tf! I did nothing wrong moss.

Shame blood was now gashing out, the ambulance was already called. So I was walking down the corridor towards the corridor most probably I'm gonna be expelled or something

Me: can you please maybe not tell them and maybe me give me another punishment?

We're now by the door. Here goes nothing.

26

She held the door knob for a minute then looked at me.

Isi: why did you do that?

Me: I really don't know.

Isi: 14:00 today at my office. Psychology department, room 321. Don't be late.

And with that she left.

I'm so confused, what just happened?

I drove back to Res coz I wasn't feeling well after that. I feel like theres no purpose for me to live. No one cares about me. It's a depressing feeling that cuts deep. I cry thinking of this horrible person I am. I cry and cry wiping my tears, listening to my own sobs. I have no one to talk to. I so wish there was someone to share my pain. I can't do this anymore.

I start thinking about cutting myself so I can feel real pain. And so I take a blade then cut my wrists. Blood follows on the floor. This feels good and so additive. I don't remember how many times I cut myself this week, ever since I came here to be exact. I conceal my sadness with a smile. I go to parties with my friends and I must admit, I now drink and smoke, it's something keeping me sane. They didn't force me but it started small. I tasted one glass and I did that more as days went on till I got

used to it. I love how alcohol makes me forget everything. Then again the following day I remember everything.

In my fridge I have six cans of Reds. So I'm sorted for this week.

My alarm rings indicating that it's 13: 00 so I prepared myself, wiping the blood then wore a long sleeve vest and then a hoddie. I took black sweat pants. Honestly I wear baggy stuff most of the time so I don't attract attention to me. Sometimes I feel like the reason Aaron forced himself on me is because I wore sports shorts. So I try minimize showing skin, you feel me.

I took my car keys then drove from there since it's quite a bit far, it's less than one kilometre but anyways. I get there at 13: 50

Office 321

This is it. I knock

"Come in" I walked in and there stands Isiphile checking a book shelve.

Isi: oh hey you.

My heart starts beating fast

Me: why am I here?

Isi: counseling remember. Please take a seat

I took as seat as she went to sit down her self.

Me: so?

Isi: umm I have booked a session for you with Ayanda.

She writes something

Isi: your session starts in 10 minutes. She's in the opposite office okay.

Me: I don't need therapy.

Isi: oh trust me (looking at a computer screen) Xena Kabelo Mlanjana I will take you to that disciplinary hearing if you don't go there. Don't think you can cheat. Your attendance is going to be marked and boy you might kiss your school a good bye if you don't. I'm just doing you a favour.

I flicked my eyes

Advertisement

almost clicking my tongue as I exited and knocked in the opposite office.

"I'm coming" I hear feet steps coming towards the door. Then it opened, a cute lady appeared.

Lady: you must be Kabelo.

Me: yes

Lady: come in.

I walked in

Lady: how are you doing Kabelo?

Me: I'm good and yourself?

Lady: little tired but I'll be fine

She sits in her rotating chair as I took a seat too.

Lady: Let me introduce myself, I am Ayanda Kubayi and I am going to be your therapist for the year.

A year?

Me: oh okay

Aya: so first question. Have you been to counselling before?

Me: no

Aya: okay (writes something down)

Me: what are you writing?

Aya: what brings you here?

Me: um my ... lecturer said I must come.

Aya: ohh so what's your problem?

Me: um please elaborate.

She takes out a gum(chappies) then stickes it under the desk.

Aya: um what problem do you think you have? I'm sorry this is my first time having a session, first day at work so I'm a bit nervous.

She looks young, 22/ 23 years old looking.

Aya: graduated last year. (Fixing her lipstick, staring at the mirror)

Me: it's okay.

Aya: so back to the question.

She gets up and walks around, which I find intimidating. Can she just be still, anyways I try meet her half way.

Me: anger issues Aya: oh okay

(she seems understanding) what do you think causes that?

I can't tell her what happened. It's too embarrassing

Aya: I forgot to say something. The information is confidential so you can talk as long as you want.

She went back to sitting then took the gum under the desk, then eat it. Aya: yes I'm waiting

She waves her hair back. Then took out a band tying it.

Aya: I'm sorry but this hair (tied it in a loose bun) is getting on my face. I fake smiled

Aya: so what do you think causes these problems? Take note I'm not here to judge.

She takes off the gum and starts playing with it.

Me: um I was gang raped almost two months ago.

Aya: did you say no or try to fight back?

Me: yes Aya: how come you don't seem bothered by the assault?

Me: you're offensive bro I can't answer that.

Aya: mmmh what were you wearing?

Some what I feel offended again, how can she ask me that.

Me: sport shorts

Aya: you asked for it girl, how can you wear shorts.

Me: coz I was jogging! Aya: Did you report it?

Me: you know what. I think I'm done here

I got up and saw my way to the door. I'm not gonna seat here and be insulted by this "graduate" lady. It seems as if she doesn't love her job or something.

27

After that session I got to my room and cried my lungs out. All I could do is cry, nothing but cry. I slept in tears, in deep negative thoughts.

After an hour or so ... I think.

I heard my door being bagged hard. I think someone is knocking so got up and went to check.

Oh the boys are here.

Scar: you aren't ready yet!

Me: I'm not going guys.

Mandla: nonsense. Get dressed, we're going out tonight!

I can't argue with these so

Me: okay wait for me.

Fred: you don't seem okay. Are you cool?

Me: yes I am totally fine. Now can I get dressed (with a smile)

Scar: we'll be waiting.

I close the door and took a quick shower, wore black sweat pants and a white hoddie. Did a little talk before going out.

Me: Xena, you can do this. You're a fighter. You won't break down

But deep down I know I wanna sleep and just cry but anyways I can't disappoint my boys. I went out

Mandla: you took forever

Fred: she's a girl guys

Mandla: then Scar is a girl too coz this guy right here takes an hour to pick an outfit. KB is better

I smile proudly

Scar: tsek tsek

Out bursts of laughter follow. I laughed so hard that even tears fell on my eyes

Me: did you see his expression. Dude ...you're such a mood
Scar

We're now at the party

Scar: today we're going to the VIP section.

Me: why?

Mandla: he owns this place. Recently bought it last week.

Me: wow congratulations dude

Scar: thanks bro.

We sat there and then girls came to attend us, awww it's getting juicy. I think I'm gonna like this. We were served drinks, chilling, talking.

Then Scar stood up and went to this other scary guy gave him something an envelope.

Me: guys can you tell me how you managed to have cars at this age?

In my mind I'm thinking. So Mandla is from a poor background and he has a J wagon, but couldn't afford fees. How? ... maybe he had NSFAS when he came and still uses it. All of this doesn't add up.

Fred: that's limited knowledge, we don't talk about that.

Me: okay

Mandla: girls, can you leave us for a minute.

He gives a ladies a stack of cash.

Scar then comes holding a bottle of expensive champagne.

Scar: what's up? Why is everyone tense?

Fred: ask your question again KB.

Did he just put me on the spot. Fine then I'll ask it again.

Me: I was asking where you get all the money you have. I get that you guys are from rich families (to Scar and Fred) but I'm from a rich family too but this kind of cash? It doesn't add up

Scar gives me that deadly stare, I feel kinda intimidated but I'm used to it now so I stare back.

Fred: alright

Mandla: let's just tell her

Scar: we are gangsters, we Rob banks, hijack cars, sell drugs etcetera.

I'm shocked, I expected this but somehow it's still shocking to me.

Me: oh

Scar: happy now?

Me: um no. I don't know

Fred: don't be harsh Bongani

His actual name is Bongani... I didn't know that.

Scar: okay (still staring at me)

Mandla: now that you know, would you like to join? We don't mind you being part of us you know.

Scar: plus you're the target now.

Me: what do you mean I'm a target.

Scar looks at Mandla

Mandla: he means that since you're close to us...

Fred: I think she gets it.

Scar: so we will provide training for you. You happy?

Me: can you stop asking if I'm happy! I'm not happy Bongani

He is shocked at the use of his name.

Me: you know what? If I stop being friends with you guys then I'll stop being the target.

I got up, attempted to leave. Scar pulled my leg I fell on the ground

Me: dude What The Fuck!!!

Scar: you wanna die? You think we're crazy when we make sure you're in Res safe. When we hire a car to follow you around just to make sure you're safe. You're not leaving us, have I made myself clear.

Me: mxm

I got up. Normally when people talk to Scar, which rarely happens

Advertisement

they seems scared and all. They don't talk any way. But I do. I'm not afraid of his...look. He is a softie covered in a hardcore body but can't really express his feelings in a normal way. Which most probably caused his break up with his 3 days girlfriend.

Me: okay I'll do what you say mainly because I love you guys.

Fred: ouuuuw our pumpkin

Me: whose a pumpkin?

Laughter cracks out. Fred is in tears laughing his lungs out and Scar is kinda smiling trying to laugh kinda vibes. He doesn't do showing emotions a lot. Well that's when I met them.

Mandla is on his knees biting the table.

Mandla: I love you Kabelo yeva.

Fred: her expression finished me.

We talked through how this training will happen, having a bottle of champagne, smoking cocaine, taboco, you name it. Normally I smoke the regular feg... You see the white and orange, that is on regular basis.

After discussing a decision is made.

Scar: you're starting this weekend. It's gonna be an everyday thing, only two hours of your time. But Saturday it's gonna be a full session okay

Me: cool

I'm excited and happy coz I'm actually realising that I can this us on my advantage. I can finally get revenge on Aaron!

Following day, I woke up with a throbbing head ache. I don't remember getting in Res but I'm in my room. Thanks to whoever brought me back.

My rings right then.

I don't know this number

Me: hello?

Person: Xena why did you leave the session with Ayanda?

Me: good morning to you too Isiphile

Where did she get my number?

Isiphile: do you think this is some kind of joke. You know the consequences of this?

Me: I know and I'd rather be excluded than endure being asked questions I'm not comfortable with.

Isiphile: should I get you someone else?

Me: I don't know.

Isiphile: you need help Xena and I'm not giving up on you. I'll look for another person who might be available

Silence follows, I hear papers flipping.

Isi: umm I don't think there are people Available in the list for now. Ummm would you mind if I'm your new therapist?

Me: I don't know

I rolled my eyes.

Isi: okay then appointment set at 11:00 today. You know my office moss.

Me: whatever Isiphile, are you done?

Isi: (sighs heart broken) okay.

I dropped the call. After yesterday my view of these people changed. What if she'll judge me too? You know what, I don't think she's attractive anymore, I don't like her. She's too much, always Kabelo this Kabelo that. Yhuuuu fara gowd ! She gets on my last nerve, I'm questioning myself why did I let myself have a crush on my lecturer? Is that even allowed, dating with a lecturer that is. yea I made the fantasies but I didn't entertain the idea.

Today I don't have morning classes so I slept through till it was 09:00 then started with my hygiene routine. Cleaned my room then took my car keys and drove there

Standing in front of office 321, I knocked.

"Come in" I walked in

Isi: hello (typing something on her laptop) give me a sec I'll be with you now. You can take a seat.

She continued typing while I looked around. This place has a lot of papers, no order. But Isi's slides and work is excellent when she presents it in class I don't get why there is such a mess here. I looked at the book shelve, all 7 Harry potter series lined up.

"Done!" She says then shifts her eyes to where I was looking.

Isi: I love that series.

I nod

Isi: right let's get down to it.

I'm not ready for this.

Isi: how are you by the way?

I have hang over like my body is just tied.

Me: I'm good.

Isi: okay so what do you expect from this session?

I kept quiet.

Isi: okay so I am Isiphile Lerato Peter.

Peter? That is Aarons surname, but Aaron doesn't have siblings, weird but anyways maybe it's the same. You know how people can share same surnames but are not related.

Isi: I'm sure you know me by now. So what are your thoughts on this session

Me: I don't know (I sighed, signaling that I'm bored)

Isi: okay so let's first talk about the fight. Why did you beat him up like that?

Me: I was angry.

She has a note book too. I wonder what they write on that book.

Isi: about what excalty? Can you care to explain that

Me: I don't know.

Isi: come on Xena. Work with me. I'm here to help you.

Me: when is this session ending again?

Isi: we've got 45 minutes left.

Me: mmh

Isi: so why were you angry?

I keep quiet.

After 10 minutes

Isi: Xena ...

Me: how many minutes left?

Isi: I want to help you. Please co- operate.

I remembered that I have a right to walk out if I'm not feeling comfortable. That is in the counseling rules. I saved myself from this pain

Me: I'm leaving

Isi: okay let's hope you'll do better in the next session. We'll get through this together, don't worry.

She gave me a friendly smile as I walked myself out. Banging the door.

Wait...is she crying?

28

I attended the rest of my classes, my Psych class was quite awkward thou. Isi seemed down but tried to conceal it.

After classes I went to this training thing.

I won't tell the details though...what I can say is. It's out of town. In a shady place, the things they are making us do are tough. This is place where Special agents train mainly but you know gangster, special agents similar things.

When I was hitting the punching bag I think I saw a girl with pink hair. Similar to Isiphile's I'm paranoid. This can't happen. No she's an innocent soul that doesn't deal with such stuff right? ...right.

Following day, Thursday 10 March 2016

A ringing phone woke me up. Does this person know that it's morning.

Me: hello

Caller: hey, you're still sleeping?

Me: who are you?

Caller: you don't know me ?

Oh Isiphile.

Me: yes I don't know you

Isi: anyways How did you sleep?

That's so sweet.

Me: good, thanks for asking. You?

Isi: good, so are you up for today's session?

Me: I don't know.

Isi: okay.

Me: yeah

Awkward silence

Isi: um I have to go. I'm working on something here, today's slides that is.

Me: ok

Isi: listen X.

Did she just call me by my nickname? ooo this is getting me feeling some tupa way.

Isi: I know that going through a tough patch is nerve wracking. Look, it will end. Just allow all the pain to flow don't hold back feelings coz it's damaging. You see?

Me: yeah.

Isi: you are stronger than this. Look, when you see me, I don't want you thinking oh here is my lecturer. Don't be scared of me. I'm not as kind but see me as your friend.

Weird

Me: okay.

Isi: if you need anything I'm just a call away.

Me: okay

Isi: ohkay

Me: yep

Isi: alright

Me: yeah

Isi: mmh

Me: Good bye Isi.

Isi: b..ye

Her voice at the end of the call is doing wonders on my body.

Xena didn't you just say you don't like her?

Me to me: I think I was joking.

She is ...sweet. recalling the first time I met her. What a bad first impression. Being late for class. Argh let me stop blushing.

I wonder how she moves in bed. Wait is she a lesbian? What if she won't like me. Hey Xena you're too forward, you're thinking about taking her to bed now. Just 5 minutes you hated her. I bite my lower lip thinking more about her.

She's you're lecturer, those type of relationships aren't allowed.

Okay let me prepare for school. That's too much thinking.

"How are you?" That's another session with Isiphile. My lips curl into a smile.

Me: I'm doing better.

Isi: that's great. So today I want us to do this excise, right so let's go.

Me: where are we going?

Isi: you'll see. You don't have classes after this right?

Me: nope.

Isi: great.

I'm here wondering what is going on in her head. What is she thinking? What's happening?

She pulls my hand, I bite my lower lip following her then usher's me to her car, it's golf. The old version of it.

Me: where are we going?

Isi: be patient.

Me: okay.

We drive to the tallest building in Johannesburg then go up the lift.

Me: where are we going I can't take it anymore.

Isi: chill Xena we're almost there.

We reached the top level. We now seeing every thing at the bottom

Advertisement

cars buses shops. This view is good, but I think it's better at night.

Isi: so here we're going to do this excise.

Me: what's that ?

My mind be thinking other things. Like am I about to get laid or something.

Isi: so you'll stand at the edge of the building, pretend to fall then I'll catch you.

Me: fall? Like fall where the is cars and road?

Isi: yep

Me: why would I do that? You understand that this building has 15 floors

Isi: okay let's start with me.

She walks to the edge then without warning let's herself go I quickly held her before she falls. I'm mad at her, why would she do that?

Me: ARE YOU CRAZY!!!!

She laughs at me and I'm surprised by her reaction.

Isi: your turn. It's called the Trust excise. Now go

I walk close to the edge scared, what if she doesn't catch me.

I step on the edge and she is behind me.

Isi: 1 2 3

I can't bring myself to 'act' as if I am falling.

Isi: relax, I'll catch you. I would not let you die.

Okay here goes nothing

I let myself free, air gashes on my ears in just a second I feel arms around me.

And I'm back in the surface.

Isi: see we're both alive.

Me: that was a great excise, I wasn't expecting that.

Isi: you did good thou.

She takes a fleece then puts it on the floor.

Isi: today we'll do our session here. Relax no one usually comes up here. Plus I've booked this place.

Me: ohk so what do you wanna know.

Isi: your gender first. Are you comfortable with they? He? Or she coz I can't really understand you.

Me: first of I'm a girl and you can address me as she. I'm a girl moss.

Isi: okay I'm cool with that. Are you straight or tomboy or ...

Me: is this part of the session

Isi: no I'm just curious, you don't have to answer that.

I smile

Me: I don't mind answering that. I am a proud lesbian but my parents especially mom are against it. They are Christians so that ain't allowed so that is that. My mom wants me to get a man just imagine.

Isi: have you tried explaining this to them?

Me: no I wouldn't say that.

Isi: do they know?

Me: yes

I feel so open and free. I didn't think I'd be opening up to her like this. No one knows this side of me. I've never talked about it to anyone.

Me: they caught me with a girl.

I lay on my back then she copies me. It's kinda getting dark, stars are appearing.

Isi: red handed?

Me: yah and she kicked me out. There was so much drama after that. A lot of stuff happened.

Isi: what's that "lot of stuff" ?

I turned to her

She turns to me and we're looking at each others eyes.

Me: promise you won't judge.

Isi: I won't judge you X.

Me: you're beautiful by the way

I turned to look at the stars while I saw her blushing.

Me: so this is how this happened, I'm starting from the beginning till the day my best friend turned his back and lost all the trust I once had on him.

It was another regular house party, so we play truth or dare right and ...

I tell her all the details, literally everything till the end leaving nothing behind.

Silence followed

I feel less burdened and better. She's been quiet for a while now.

Isi: you're brave

Silence

Isi: if that was me, I wouldn't take it. That's too much pain and sadness just imagine living with that for the rest of your life. You're a survivor and that Aaron must pay.

Me: he moved out of his old house.

Isi: I can track him down and get him arrested. That is not what you deserve. Why would he be so cruel?

Me: that's my question

Isi: just because you rejected his love doesn't mean he should force himself on you.

We talked more, laughed, made jokes. This is a very cool therapist plus lecturer.

Isi: I have a question for you?

Me: shot

She turned to me and I looked at her a smirk creeping on my lips.

Isi: stop staring at me like that you're making me shy.

I bite my lower lip blushing, Isi covered her face with hands and start giggling

Isi: gosh X.

Oh I wasn't aware that I was biting my lip. It just happened. My bad.

Me: you were saying?

Isi: how do lesbians have...you know. How do you do it?

Me: I can show you now if you don't mind.

29

Isi: I do mind, plus I'm straight like a ruler . I'll never be a lesbian,

Me: okay that's cool.

Isi: you know let me just drop the question. It's kinda awkward.

After that line there's awkward silence, only our breathing are heard. I don't know what to say next so I move closer to her, then lay on her chest. She looks at me, smiles then looks up at the sky.

Shuu!!! Her breasts are so comfortable, this girl is gifted!

She ends up playing with my hair, rubbing it softly. No words exchanged. My heart beat Fam. That one is a traitor, the way it was beating, its fast. My body feeling some type of way. Argh I love this chick.

Following day 11 March 2016, Friday

I woke up from my comfortable blankets. Thinking about yesterdays evening. It was so sweet. Okay X stop thinking and prepare for the day.

I went to take a quick shower, shaved everywhere except my eyebrows and head of course.

When I was done dressing up I read from my emails that lectures are cancelled. Eish I'm already dressed and ready to go. And this happens, anyways I'll just go study at the library. I wanna be that serious kid from now on. My grades are not good at all. I don't like medicine, I hate doing these subjects. I hate it, as a result I've been getting below 50% in all the tests we wrote. Just imagine, so automatically I lost my DP, but there is a chance for improvement next term. For pysch quite relatable and I love that module. It's the only module making sense thus I always read it, everyday that's why other modules suffer. Let me look at my Psych test marks

I checked my student profile, I got an 80%

Wow at least something made me smile.

I took a screenshot then sent it in the group chat of my gang. These guys have been passing with flying colours, and the idea of asking for help is kinda tough for me. They offered to help me starting this Monday, dude it's like I don't have tutors. The problem is that, I know that I don't know this module but then where exactly don't I know what I don't know. I'm not sure if I'm making sense.

Plus doing a course I don't like makes me have attitude like serious. This is something I should voice out to my therapist. I don't know if something can be done.

Mandla replies "wow that is impressive"

Minutes later Scar replied "are you sure these are your marks?"

Typed " yeah, why?"

"Do you have an affair with the psychology lecturer?" What! How can he say that? He thinks Isi added marks on my work. That's my hard work dude come on

I typed

"There nothing going on between me and Isi

Advertisement

she's my therapist, that's all"

Mandla and Fred sent laughing emoji's on Scars text.

Fred is typing

I tied my hair in to a ponytail then checked my phone.

Fred replied "Scar has a crush on you KB but he's too scared to tell you"

Mandla replies with laughing emoji.

Scar "tsek Nina!! "

I sent a laughing emoji , that's impossible. Right ?

"Hey X" another session after doing some useless reading at the library...it's useless coz I spent an hour trying to figure out where to start. And one thing about me. When I study at the library, I get drowsy. That place is quiet y'all like quiet and I've got this disease of getting drowsy when I touch a book. But let's say I'm watching a movie... Xena can go on for 2 hours watching but 10 minutes into ready.... I'm already drowsy. I'm not sure if it's me or what.

I took a seat at Isiphile's office

Me: hey (smiling)

Isi: you look good I like your outfit

I chuckled staring at myself.

Me: thanks, you don't look bad yourself.

Isi: yeah yeah so how have you been? How are you doing?

Me: I'm stressed out.

Isi: why?

Me: Thing is I'm failing dismally

She had a concerned look .

Isi: you did good on your first pysch test.

Me: I'm talking about other modules, all the other modules.

Isi: oh okay so what do you think makes you fail?

Me: I don't like the course I'm doing.

Isi: why not change it?

Me: my mom wants me to be a doctor.

Isi: you can still change it.

Me: how?

Took a sip from her coffee

Isi: you can change it and then not tell them now. Tell them when you already did.

Me: I've got strict parents. Mom will kill me with her bare hands. So wish you can meet them and see it yourself

Isi: then don't tell them. You're in university, they can't see your results. The only thing they see is the money they have to pay only. You see?

Taking another sip

Me: yeah so how do I go about that?

Isi: you can talk to the Dean of your facility. Tell him you want to change your course, simple as that

Me: oh okay thanks I didn't think about that

Isi: you know I was once in your feet, but for me I continued doing the course which was Psychology, I ended up falling in love with it. And here I am. But if you say you aren't doing well then definitely change, change, change

Taking another sip

Me: can I have some.

Isi: you want tea

Me: yeah

Isi: take one sip. Only one sip okay (with a warning look)

She gave me, then I took a sip. Mmh it's tasteless.

Me: did you put sugar in here?

Isi: yes one tea spoon

Me: damn!

Isi: let's go out. I'll buy you a better tasting one.

I stared at her for sometime

Isi: stop licking your lips boo.

She flicked her cheeks, I didn't notice I was doing that.

Me: oh I'm sorry

She stared at me our eyes connecting then she broke the stare, clearing her throat.

Isi: you're my student right?

Me: yes I am. Why did you say that.

Isi: I'm just reminding you.

She took her purse

Me: you've got something on your blazer

Isi: where?

She looked on her shoulder moving closer to her then brushed *nothing* on her blazer

Me: and here too

I brushed her chin, she looked at my lips full of lust. I held her neck with my other hand then leaned in for a kiss, smashing my lips against hers, she moans then held my waist. I deepen the kiss she responds like she's been hungry for me. I moved my hands down her waist while hers moved up on back in circles. I squeezed her butt,

Isi: ahhh!

Music to my ears, I squeezed it, squeezed it brushing it then kissed her neck.

Isi: ohh X

Me: yes baby say my name

I grabbed her then put her on the table sucking, licking, kissing her neck .

Isi: yess

I groan in response

She pushes my body on her

Isi: mmh

30

I pulled out then took a glance at her.

Isi: um sorry I did... I shouldn't have done this.

She got off the table looking all type of nervous

Isi: this is so wrong. You're student and this is so unprofessional. You know what? Let's forget this ever happened.

Me: Isiphile please don't do this to yourself. I know you love me.

Isi: you're wrong Xena

At this point I'm defeated. Why is she denying her feelings for me.

Isi: look I cant be in a relationship with my student. It's wrong and unethical, next thing people will say I added marks on your script. Do you wanna live with that? Look we will never work. Sorry if I led you on

She looks at the wall clock.

Isi: our session ended few minutes ago. Now if you'll excuse me I have to work.

Me: we aren't going out anymore?

Isi: yes we aren't.

Me: Isiphile please, give us a chance. We'll make sure no one finds out about it.

She seems to be thinking.

Isi: Xena just move on with your life. And don't forget to close the door behind you when you leave.

Wow so she's pushing her feelings away. I get that we it's not professional but we love each other. Well it's too early to say love but that feeling. I can see it through her eyes. I'm hurt, I've never faced rejection. This cuts deeply.

Isiphile

I guess you know me by now, I'm Isiphile Lerato Peter. Originally from the Western Cape in Cape Town. I grew up poor with my grandmother, mom died when I was younger then I don't really know my dad, I never talk about him or seen him. I was nine years old when mom left us and she gave me this necklace, told me to never take it off. I still have it. I became a special agent coz apperantly the people mom worked for something along the lines of "Jana " "Maja" but what I know is they are from Durban, so mom stole this from them and it has something I don't even know. I can open it once I turn 21. So mom was killed for it then my grandmother, she wasn't

working at that time made this arrangement for me. So she can get money to take me to this school/ training. I went to school at an early age, never did grade R

Advertisement

I was 3 years ahead, you know how teachers make clever students skip grades. Which explains why I'm now working at this age. Enough about my boring past.

Let's talk about Xena.

She's turning 19 this year. I'm turning 21.

She's a kid! A child and I can't deal with a student. Oh God please forgive me. I know this small stupid feeling I have will be gone. In just few weeks it will be gone. This is nothing serious. What I must do is not entertain this. I heard a knock just when X walked out. It's Ayanda

Aya: chommie

Me: hey friend

She bores me to the core (rolling my eyes behind the scene)

Aya: and then (pointing at the door)

Me: what?

Aya: KB what's happening between you and him.

Me: nothing Aya. (blushing) nothing is going on between me and her

Aya: I think I heard some argument

I panicked

Me: what did you hear ?

Aya: nothing just some just an argument.

She sat down then took my coffee without asking. Dude I hate someone who does that. Taking something without asking for it. It gets on my nerves but let her be. I've warned her a thousand times about this but dololo. Ingena ngapha iphume ngapha (it get on this ear and gets out with another)

Aya: he's hot neh?

Me: I don't know about that.

Aya: uyababa shame I so wish I can have him for myself.

Me: excuse me?

Aya: no ways I'm trying my luck.

Me: she's taken.

Aya: I'll be the side chick

Me: heyyy she doesn't do side cheeks (frowning) are you crazy.
Xena is TAKEN!

Aya: why are you so defensive? Wait. You are her girl. Wow interesting what will the department say when they hear you're dating a student?

Me: I am not. (Rolling my eyes) but you get that she is a student.

Aya: yes. I'm not a lecturer so I can date her if I want.

Me: get out Ayanda.

Aya: why?

Me: get the fuck out dammit. Or you want me to drag you! Get out!

Aya: ok I wonder what I have done

She walks out as soon as the door closes I furiously push the papers to the floor stepping on them screamed in frustration.

Xena

After I left I went straight to the Dean and dropped the course, took Music as my new course.

At last I can fulfil the dream of composing music as my career. At this point I don't care what my parents think. I'll deal with

them when I graduate. They wouldn't ever find out...they won't I hope.

So late in the day, Scar invited us over at his club. We're chilling, having drinks.

Me: hey waiter (the waiter comes) 4 vodkas please.

Waiter: 4 vodkas (writing) anything else.

Me: guys ?

Scar: we're good.

Mandla passed me a cigger, I gladly take it. Scar gives me a warning look.

Me: what?

When the cigger between my lips.

Scar: Xena put that thing away please.

Me: and who are you to detect what I do?

Silence, Mandla and Fred stop what they were doing.

Scar: Kabelo I said put it away.

Me: mxm

I continued smoking. Veins appeared on his face.

Me: what are you gonna do?

Scar: take you out of training.

Oh no. He's not gonna do that. He knows how much that means to me. And since when does he have a problem with me smoking. It's not like I'm pregnant! I'm clean and healthy! Plus I checked myself a week ago. Okay expect the huge consumption of drugs.

Scar: don't make me repeat myself. You know the Training rules

I gave Mandla the cigger in defeat.

Fred looks at Scar weirdly.

Mandla: Are you good bro?(asking Scar)

Scar: yes

He continued sniffing cocaine while I watch.

Me: I hate you.

Scar: and I love you.

The guys made whistles.

Me: what?

I just can't believe that he said those words. This must be some kind of joke. He is joking, I know so.

Scar: yes I love you Kabelo. Can we talk in private?

Wow I can't believe this ? What does he like in me. I mean I'm boyish, I like girls. Why would he, out of all people love me?

We went to corner chairs

Scar: look I don't wanna get you all worked up or what but yes I've noticed how strange I act all that. You don't have to say you love me back. But please think about it. Maybe it can make you get my sister out of your skull.

Me: wait...Isiphile is your sister?

Scar: yes I'm done talking, just think about what I said. Don't be too harsh on yourself but just think about.

Me: o.. Kay

I really didn't know what else to say.

He texts something.

Scar: were going to a house party, Lerato has bought a house so Friday it's her house warming party. Which is TODAY. Almost forgot

This is too much for one day!

I'm speechless

I don't like him that way. Will this turn out like the Aaron case? I hope not. Just when I healed this happens. Let's wait and see.

We all went to this house warming party. This place is Excellent. Its made out of glass, there a sea through pool made by glass. Lights make the house more attractive. When we reach the gate there's tight security. Then at the door too. Isiphile has a golf, an old one at that. You see white old old golfs. That one exactly. Where does she get money for this luxury. When we got in its no ordinary party. People are wearing suits! When I say suits, it's designer looking suits like everything seems expensive. From the flower vase to the drinks.

From afar I could see Isi wearing a hugging black classic dress revealing her smooth legs. She is hot! I tell you. She's laughing out with her friends then stops half way once she sees us. I smirk as she walks towards us.

Scar has this emotionless face,

Isi: h...ey, you came.

Scar: since you pleaded with me.

I sense some tension.

Isi: come this way please.

She ushered us to some couches.

Isi: I'll get you a drink just now

She snapped her fingers, a waiter came to attend us and then she left. Just like that without even looking at me.

Okay so I got water for myself since her brother doesn't want to drink. Fuck him.

We're chilling like nothing ever happened, making jokes, laughing. Everything is cool. I guess the speech already has been made coz it's around 23:00

I saw Isi glancing at me. When I look at her she pretends to me laughing.

I took a quick glance at her and she's looking at me so I look away too.

Pretend to be laughing at our jokes

Minutes later she walks out, my gut is like " follow her"

Me: guys I'll be back.

They are not even replying, they are busy laughing and drunk. Ok then I follow her down the passage. She just walked in some room, okay. When the door just closed, I knock.

"Who's it?" I keep quiet for some time.

Isi: mxm

I open the door shocked to find her laying naked on her stomach on the bed, with a fan on. Her butt all out. It's hot in here. Shit! By the sight of that I'm already turned on. It's about to go down.

Isi: the fuck!!

She is petrified

Isi: get out!

She covers her nunu. Damn that body.

Isi: get the fuck out X.

Me: I need to talk to you. You said I could talk to you anytime.

Isi: stop staring at me. I look the other way

She takes a gown then wears that.

Isi: (mumbling) I'm trying to cool myself down, this happens.

Isi: sit.

I take a seat as she sits far away from me shifting, fixing her gown.

Me: I've already seen that, why are covering?

Isi: you're so cocky.

Me: I know.

Isi: I'm listening.

Me: come closer, are you scared of me?

Isi: you? I'm not scared of you.

Me: then come closer.

Isi: no

Me: see you're scared

I chuckled at her, she's angry I can tell she then moves closer.

Isi: satisfied.

Me: closer

She smirks then moves closer

Isi: okay that enough. Talk

Me: congratulations on your new house.

Isi: thanks. That's what you wanted to talk about?

Me: no. Not at all uhm I actually want us to be friends instead of having this harsh tense feeling between us.

I reached for her hand, kissed it while she doesn't even try to resist.

Isi: you think that could work?

Me: yeah we can be friends. That way it's both professional and it's all good.

Isi: okay. Maybe we try that.

Me: so I'd like to know you first.

Isi: okay ummm you know my name already. I'm 20 years old, turning 21 on May.

Me: date?

Isi: first of may,(I nod) from Cape Town. I have one brother which is Scar, he's my twin.

Me: oh but he's doing first year modules.

Isi: not all of them. He's not doing medicine, his course allows him to take first year modules then next year, well this year I think he's graduating coz this is his final year.

—

This dude never opens up about such stuff. I know Mandla is 19, he failed his first year and was open about that the first day. Fred he's 21

a new comer but from here(Jo'burg) so I guess they knew each other way back. But Scar...I knew nothing.

—

Me: oh okay, so

Licked my lips on purpose she blushes

Then kissed her hand, her eyes have now soften.

Isi: I can't do this (pulling her hand off)

Me: what? We're friends, what's hard in being friends.

As I'm speaking she is looking at my lips.

Isi: um what did you say?

Me: you're not listening to me huh?

She shifts then her breast is now visible then she covers up.

Me: you've got cute twins. Can I feel them

Isi: why?

Me: they seem soft, I wanna feel them.

Isi: I'll count to 5 then you stop.

Me: okay

I move closer then touch them

Isi: one

I rubbed them

Isi: ohhh

Massaged them as she moans

Isi: X (moaning)

I leaned for a kiss, she responds as I softly squeezed her breast massaging with one hand. My other hand going on the back of her neck. She pulls me closer moaning while I groan as she dips her hands on my hair, massaging my scalp

Isi: oh X.

I smirk then pulled out, carrying her on my waist as she wraps her legs me then pinned her in the wall kissing her hungrily

Me: mmh

I made traces on her neck then slowly sucked her

Isi: Fuck!!!! Xena!!!!

Me: yes baby

Squeezing her ass, massaging it, rubbing it. She starts grinding on me

Isi: oh yes

I grind in unison with her

Isi: you're good.

Me: I know

I put her in bed pulled her gown off while she help me do that.

Isi: make it quick X. I want you right now.

Wow that sounds so sexy coming from her.

Today she's turning lesbian, and she knows it too.

I take some time staring at her. Today, It's all about her, I'm gonna make sure that she moans and screams my name as loud as that voice can.

I start blowing hot air from her neck to stomach then nunu

Isi: yesess

I open her legs and she's already vibrating. She's wet down there, make soft kisses on her inner thighs, making traces blowing her nunu then continue kissing her thighs moving closer to her nunu,

Isi: do it already X

Me: say please

I blow some air, she shakes a little

Isi: please X.

Me: beg me, say please daddy

Isi: please daddy

I licked the outer layer on her nunu, playing with it, brushed it with my hand, then licked it from the virgina pass her urine tube to her clit. Once I found it I sucked it.

Isi: ahhhhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

I rotate my tongue on it for time starting slow till fast.

I moved my tongue fast to she cums then pause.

She relaxes a bit then I start again cleaning her up. She tastes good. Normal.

I went back to kissing her, while fingering her. She moves in unison with my hand moaning as I groan,

Me: I love you

Isi: I love you too X.

I push my two fingers deep

Her expression as I hit the g spot, breathe taking. She lays kisses on my neck.

Me: mh Isi

She sucks my neck sofly bite it slowly pulls off. Shit! My whole body shivers, chill X it's just a love bite. Wow she knows her shit. Does she have a boyfriend? Maybe that's why she was resist.

I continue fucking her brains out while she screams my name.
Then I pull of

She gasped looking at me with red eyes

Isi: why did you stop ?

I smirk then went to the bath room, took a clean towel then wiped her.

Isi: are we done?

I smile at her wiping her clean then I wore my clothes

Isi: where are you going?

When I'm fully dressed. I crawl on the bed then kissed her passionately. Pulled out

Then I walked to the door. Went back to the party

If she wants me, she will call me.

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

32

Isiphile

This got me messed up. Am I lesbian? Just yesterday I was straight and now I'm left yearning for more of her.

The way she pinned me on the wall to the way she carried me to bed. The right spots that she touched me on, even my ex boyfriend didn't touch me the way she did. With just that I want more of her. So sad it's end of term today, most probably she's leaving for vacation. Maybe if I can get her to come to me again. I need her as in now. I'm desperate for her. I never thought I'd be thirsty for a girl like that, but with Xena. She makes me feel out of this world.

I scrolled on my phone for her number.

She doesn't pick up. I call again she can't do this to me.

Xena: hey.

Me: umm

I dropped the call. I can't bring myself to ask her. Isiphile, you are not a lesbian, you're straight as a ruler. Okay. Just forget about her and everything she did to you.

My nunu is painful from being horny. No I need her. I called again

Xena: yeah

Me: can you please come this side. I wanna show you something

Xena: I'm chilling with the guys

Me: it won't take too long

Xena: I'll see what I can do.

I waited impatient. Few minutes later she walks in. My heart starts beating fast.

Xena: I'm here, what is it?

She's all serious

Me: um um you kinda left me ... Know what. Xena you can't leave me hanging I mean. That's unfair

Xena: you're not my girl. I'm not your whatever so I owe you nothing.

Me: so you want me to be your girlfriend?

Xena: yes I love you Lerato

Me: look Xena I'm not gay. I can't accept you just like that.

Me: it's okay. That's cool too. When you are sure let me know, I'm only one call away.

And with that she left.

I lay on my back tears steaming on my eyes. Is there a possibility that I may be gay? In my life, I've never looked women that way. This is my first encounter and it's a tough decision to make.

Xena

I went back to the guys, the way they're so drunk. Thank goodness the driver was already here to pick us up.

The driver dropped us off in our respective places. Just when I layed my head on the pillow, my phone rings. It's Isiphile
She should know what she wants and it's clear. We both know we love each other so what's hard about this?

Me: yes?

Isi: hey X

Me: yes?

Isi: I'm by your Res can you come out?

Me: ok I'm coming

I dropped the call then wore my shoes went outside and there she is in her golf. She got out when she saw me, looking worried.

Isi: hey

It's like she's been crying, this is heart breaking so I embraced her on my arms brushing her back while she holds me tightly.

Me: how are you?

Isi: I'm... I don't know X. Can we talk in the car?

Me: okay.

We got in then went down to business/ talk

Isi: um... I'm not sure whether I'm making a decision in a hurry or what. But X please understand that I've been straight for 20 years, I've never been in love with a girl until you came along. This is hard for me X and I'd like if you would be patient with me

Me: I never forced you to agree on being my girlfriend.

Tears steamed on her eyes.

Isi: I love you X.

I put my hand on her cheek caressing it.

Me: I've waited too long to hear those words. I love you too Isi
I buried her in a warm hug brushing her back.

Me: I understand you're new to this, we'll walk through this together. I'm gonna teach you everything there is to know and we'll take it slow. In your pace

She looked at me smiling.

Me: you're so cute rn

She smiled more then I wiped those tears.

Isi: thank you for the amazing night and experience.

Me: I aim to please.

She simply smiles

Isi: I love you.

Me: I love you too

I peck her lips the we stay in that comfortable position for some time before we part ways.

It was now 06:00 am in the morning she got here two hours ago

Today at 21:00 I'm leaving for Durban coz it's holidays so this maybe the last time I'm seeing her. I didn't tell her I'm leaving today thou coz she might be upset.

I spent the whole day trying to recover yesterdays sleep until some punk decided to disturb my sleep. I went to check the door only to find Scar standing there

Scar: pumpkin!!!

I chuckled a little

Me: hey, come in.

I swayed then he got in, he's looking good.

Me: where are you going?

Scar: taking you to the airport.

Me: I'm taking Greyhound, a bus.

Opening the curtains

Scar: you can sleep girl!

He's different today, more like in a happy mood and talking a lot and free.

Me: I'm tired from yesterdays party.

Scar: I feel you. I'm tired too but I had to come here just to see you.

Me: ohh

He sat on the study desk legs swinging in the air.

Scar: I'm not sure if you want more time to think this through or ...

Me: uhm (rubbing my neck) I don't wanna lie to you Scar. I don't want you thinking that (removed my hand) maybe we have a chance....

Scar: is that a love bite?

Me: where?

Scar: don't play dumb, on your neck!

Me: um no I think an iron burnt me or something

He is fuming with anger.

Scar: is it my sister?

Me: what? (Breathing heavy)

Scar: did you sleep with my sister Kabelo?!

Me: yes I did!

He starts pacing up and down like he's stressed.

Scar: how can you do that? She's our enemy and yet you do this? Me: enemy?

Scar: Mandla didn't tell you? Or Fred ?

Me: no how about you tell ME!

Scar: you better cut things off with her.

Me: I'm not doing that. I love your sister Bongani.

Scar: what about us?

Me: there is no us. I hope you'll respect my decision.

Scar: okay so when do you think you'll love me more than "her"?

Me: I don't know, maybe we aren't meant to be. Look I get that rejection sucks but I'm sure you can find another girl that will love you the same. Scar: but it's you. You're that girl.

Me: Scar please don't make this hard on me.

Scar: fine Xena. You know what? I don't hate you, I'll never hate you. For the fact that you choose to go with the enemy you're out of the gang. Period!

Me: Training? I had only a week left.

Scar: being off the gang means you're out of everything and the girl you're so obsessed with is getting married next month. Did she tell you that? No she didn't. If you decide to change your mind just call or text me.

He leaves the plane ticket on the desk then bangs the door on his way out

33

I took the ticket, I'm departing at 18:00, OR Thambo airport.

Right then I got a WhatsApp message from him

"Be ready at 16:30, I've hired a driver to take you to the airport"

"Thanks, you didn't have to do that" I replied

He types ...then stops ...typing appears again

Beep

"Pleasure"

I sit on my bed, thinking. I took my thoughts to the shower, letting the hot water fall on my hair.

This guy seems to be genuine. How do I untangle myself from this? I love Isi, she loves me? I'm not sure.

I got out of the shower, did the hygiene routine. Something doesn't add up, I called her, she picked up on the first ring.

Isi: hey you

Me: hi

Isi: miss me already?

Me: you have some explanation to do.

Isi: is everything okay babe?

Me: are you getting married? And to who?

Isi: what? Baby where did you hear that from?

Me: it doesn't matter. Answer my question.

Isi: No. I wasn't in a relationship so how can I possibly get married? Whoever told you that prolly is jealous of us.

Me: are you sure?

Isi: 100% babe

Me: okay so what's happening between you and Scar ?

She laughs, what's there to laugh about?

Isi: can we meet up and talk about that.

Me: so there is something?

Isi: I'm driving there right now. I'll answer your questions when I get there.

Tu Tu Tu

tf! Isiphile gotta be playing with me now

Wow so there is something, I can't wait to hear her out. I have a lot of questions on my mind, is she using me. What is happening? I need to know. Minutes later I get a call from her.

Me: yeah

Isi: I'm outside

Me: I'm coming

I went out saw her car then she went out looking all types of gorgeous.

Isi: hey

Me: hi

Tension but the spark is there

Isi: um I think we should talk in a more private space.

Me: we can go to my room... After you.

She walks in front of me then we got to my room closing the door, in fact. Locking it.

Me: so what's up?

Isi: your room is nice.

Me: thanks, get to the point already.

She let out a deep breath.

Me: you can take a seat, I have all the time (looking at the time, it's 15:50)

Isi: okay Xena I'll tell you everything.

I'm leaning on the wall, hands in my pocket.

Isi: um so first of all I'm an undercover special agent so I'm a criminal investigator, so since Scar is a "gangster" I'm sort of against that. Which was also the reason I tried to hide my feelings for you, coz I can't be associated with such people. Thus I'm a threat to him.

Me: so where does this put our relationship?

Isi: I have a lot going on in my life right now plus you being in it has been a blessing you know, although I know that you're involved in this gangsterism I love you. I didn't think that I would, It just happened.

I stared at her in doubt

Me: thank you for telling me.

she smiles (fake) I can see it

Me: is there something else?

Isi: like what?

Me: oh so you want to tell me because you're against what Scar does you're enemies.

Isi: I once led him to jail. He spent a night there and he hated me ever since. Its my job and he crossed the line.

Me: so you'd trade me too?

Isi: that was long ago. A year ago when I recently started with this thing.

Me: mm ok

Isi: babe please trust me. I'd never lie to you.

She comes closer to me.

Isi: I'd never do that to you X... Do you trust me?

Me: okay Isi I heard you.

Isi: please don't be mad at me.

Me: thing is you made it seem as if because you my Lecturer I can't have you.

Isi: that was also the reason. I'm sorry about not being honest with you from the start.

She pressed me on wall

Isi: nothing (pecks my lips) will separate us.

Me: you're sure?

Isi: even Scar won't. I see he's trying to get between.

I deepen the kiss. Pulled her close to me pressing her butt, a moan escapes her mouth.

She pulls out

Isi: there's something I meant to ask you.

Me: yeah?

Isi: have you checked yourself? Like are you clean coz I am clean.

Me: yeah I did recently, last week to be exact.

Isi: I need proof.

Me: are you for real?

Isi: yes, I can show you my medical report

She took something from her purse then showed me. Okay she tested for everything and she's clean. I took mine from my drawer showed her.

Me: see I'm clean.

Isi: but you consume drugs.

Me: occasionally.

Isi: not bad.

She put the paper on the desk

Me: now where were we?

Beep, she received a message.

Isi: sorry (looking at it) Aaron got arrested.

Me: really?

Isi: yes I just got a message from my PI.

She showed me and it's true

Advertisement

Me: do I have to appear in court?

Isi: if he pleads innocent yes but if he pleads guilty then no.

Me: hope he pleads guilty.

Isi: most probably he'll plead innocent, that's what happens. I'm being realistic right now.

Me: at least he's behind bars

Isi: yep

Me: thank you for doing this for me.

Isi: it's my job remember

Me: but thank you. Now (pecking her lips) can do some work on you?

Isi: yes daddy. (giggling)

We kiss, our lips lock I pinned her on the wall grabbing her butt as she wraps her legs on me

I sucked her neck slowly pulling off then applied wet kisses on her while she's moaning and I groaning. I brushed her ass then apply some grabbing and pressing on her. Then grind on her, pushing myself on her while she moves in unison with me grinding on me.

Isi: mh

I went back to kissing her carrying her to my bed. Once she's on the bed, we stare at each other for some time, piecing into each others souls. Damn my heat starts racing getting lost in those eyes. I take off her top then start playing with her twins she moans as I rub them softly squeeze them then lay kisses on her neck down to her stomach. I take off her jeans and she's already breathing fast, patting like she's running out of air. My phone rings.

Isi: ignore it.

Me: I have to take it.

I answered

Me: hello.

Caller: I'm waiting for you, it's your driver.

Me: oh Kay I'm coming

Call dropped

Me: babe. I have to go.

Isi: now? You're leaving me? (Teary)

Me: I'm sorry babe, I have to go now.

Isi: I need you now nje.

Me: okay I'll do a quickie...

Isi: please.

I hit 1 minute and a few seconds till she cums. All I can say is, just a small advice. Know your girls weakest point and make sure to hit those first. The driver already calling again

She dresses up quickly while I answer

Me: I'm coming, chill.

Driver: you'll be late for your flight hurry up.

Me: okay

I drop the call and Isi is ready to go. I cup her face, pecked her cute lips.

Me: I love you.

Isi: I love you too.

We kiss for the last time.

Me: I love you so much. Argh I don't think you even understand. I love you Isi...yaz I had a crush on you the first day of school?

Isi: (blushing) really? But I was so rude to you that day.

Me: and hot too.

Isi: (blushing) stop making me blush.

Me: you're cute by the way.

Isi: thanks.

She's already red as a tomato. We walked out with my suitcase. She was helping me with it since I got two suitcases.

Then we got to the car, parked those then kissed one last time. I'll really miss her.

Isi: bye babe.

The car was already moving as she waved at us. Awww I called her, we talked all the way.

.

.

.

.

.

.

All I can say after that is, at last I was home. Dad picked me up, we did a catch up on how varsity has been and yep that was it.

We got home and mom was cooking

Mom: hello girl come to your mommy

We hugged for sometime although I didn't feel comfortable.

Mom: unjani kodwa(how are you?)

Me: I'm good (fake smiled)

Mom: you can't believe what I have for you.

Me: yeah

Mom: it's a surprise. Oh before I forget, I have a dress for you upstairs in your room.

Me: I'm not wearing that.

Mom:(surprised) what?

Me: I'm not comfortable in a dress.

Mom: okay (she looks at dad)

Me: dad will do nothing about that. What's for supper? I'm hungry.

Mom: I'm dishing up.

Knock at the door.

Me: I'll get it.

I went to open, a fine looking man with a smart suit walked in.

Guy: hello (he smiled)

Okay he's a good looking dark skinned boy typa person.

Mom: Samkelo, you came early, excuse me for Xena's appearance, she (whispering) refused to wear a dress.

Sam: it's okay ma (smiling)

Mom: take a seat.

I'm looking at this weird guy like what is he doing here. We all seat down at the dinner table.

Mom says the grace then right after that my phone rings, Isi.

Me: hey um can I call you back?

Isi: you're with your family?

Mom: Xena stop using a phone at the dinner table.

Me: I'll call you back chommie

She chuckles I also find myself laughing then I drop the call.

Mom: can you share the joke.

Me: it's school related.

Mom: mmmh

Me: where is Sizwe?

Mom: he moved out to a new apartment in town.

Me: oh that's nice.

Mom: yeah he wants to be independent since he's now old.

Trying to find a wife. Dad: I think he got one.

Mom: you think so?

My phone vibrates, why is Scar calling at this time? I declined the call.

Dad: yeah I was talking to him about that, he said she's from Joburg, works as a therapist. I don't know the other details.

Clearing my throat Me: who is this guy?

Mom: oh sorry for not introducing you to him first. This Samkelo and he is a medicine student, he passes with A's like you do. You see you guys already have a lot in common. You both do medicine and excel in it. Well he's doing his final year, so he can sometimes help you. You see?

Samkelo looks at me proudly

Mom: and he's going to be your boyfriend.

34

Me: boyfriend? Whose boyfriend?

Mom: yours.

Me: who said I need one.

Mom: Kabelo, I'm your parent. I'm your mother.

Dad: he's a good person.

Me: so you support her too?

My father nods, I can't believe this.

Mom: you can start off as friends.

Sam: that's also fine for me.

I can't believe this but being friends wouldn't hurt, I'm not going to entertain the idea of being his girlfriend thou.

Me: okay

Mom: that's my girl.

So we're now friends

We ate, Sam left after that. My parents are crazy, literally crazy. I went to my room, took a shower then just slept coz I was tired. Following day, first thing I did when I woke up was call my baby.

We talked for sometime, told her what my parents are trying to do. I mean it won't work, I know it won't work. After the call I took a shower did the hygiene process, wore a t-shirt with sweat pants. I'm going nowhere moss.

So I went downstairs, the rents are at work.

Okay

I did cereal for myself, sat on the kitchen chairs scrolling on my Instagram. Came across Isiphile's posts, she's looking good. She posted this five minutes, I slid on her DM with "you look cute, where are you going?"

I continued eating, minutes later she answered

"There is an engagement party for my friend so that's where I'm going, don't worry too much babe."

"Okay, you are stunning!" I put heart emoji's

"Thank you babe" also with heart emoji's.

"I miss you" with puppy eyes emoji

"I miss you too, I wish you here with me."

My phone vibrates, she's face timing

I smiled, seeing her face is completely breathing

Isi: heyyyyy

We talked over face time for sometime till someone disturbed us. There's a knock at the door. So I had to end the call and attend that.

I opened, and Samkelo standing there.

Sam: hello

Me: hi

Sam: I came to ask a favour.

I swayed so he can walk in, at the back of my mind I'm kinda scared what if he'll take advantage of me or something. I don't feel safe at all, at least there are cameras here.

Sam: I want to tell you something.

Me: yeah

Sam: I found out that my ex girlfriend was pregnant

Me: now you want to go back to her?

Sam: no she's a crazy chick. I wouldn't. Moss I'm from a poor background, mom is not working, my father left us and got married. He doesn't care about us at all. And now I kinda need money for buying baby clothes diapers, because the baby was delivered a few days ago. Please help me you're my last hope. Look, (he took his wallet and showed me R2) this is the only money I have. Next year I'll be working at least it will be better,

I'm in need please Kabelo. The Bible says Cela uzophiwa (ask and you shall be given) I beg you.

I felt sorry for him shame. At least next year he'll be working.

Me: how much?

Sam: thank you so much Kabelo, you're a good person. Any amount will be fine.

Me: okay

Shame

Advertisement

this is so sad. I sent him R 2000 from my pocket money. I have 1K left. He needs it more than I do, shame

Fine fast forward 4 days later

I've been talking to Isi, everything is fine and she's on holiday too. My brother is coming back this weekend with his fiance. I'm happy for him shame. Scar never called me back that day, that's fine coz he technically kicked me out moss. And the there is

Samkelo

We rarely talk, if we talk it's just a "hi" I reply with "hey" then him "wud" at first I struggled to understand what that meant, he explained that but I always forget it coz I'm not used to it. Then he be like "HUD" dude...can you use Normal words?

So today he sent a text saying "hey I need money for transport, school have closed and I don't have any money to go back home." In my bank account I had less than R 500 now fine, I give him coz where else will he get it. I'm also like where was he getting the money before I came. I'm always updating Isi about this and she's like "don't send him money." But honestly you can see from his English to everything marn that he's poor but in first appearance he's all good. You wouldn't suspect.

So he's gonna be leaving campus tomorrow, but before that he'll come this side to have dinner buso. Before coming he called me.

Me: hi (weird)

Sam: hey (sounding sad)

Me: are you okay?

Sam: no, my sister needs operation, she has heart failure. Yho ntwana things are bad, ngapha I don't have money. And this thing needs R 50 000. I don't know where I'll get it.

Me: yho so what are going to do?

Sam: I don't know. She will be discharged and it may happen she dies. Oh my little sister (crying)

Me: yho

Sam: don't you have it, I'll pay you back once I'm working.

Me:(feeling guilty) no I have R 0.00 in my bank account dude.

Sam: you're lying, because you're rich you don't want to help me. Stay with your money. I can't believe that you are a pastor's child and you don't give. Wow you will burn in hell Kabelo, wena you will burn to ashes you hear me. You rich kids like acting.

I drop the phone. Wow I really don't see myself with such a selfish person. Anyways I'm used to such . People like thinking that when you're from a rich family the money is yours, I have no money, My parents own it and when they die. Probably I'll be left with nothing. Dude look neh, I've seen his (Sam) photos on Facebook, yeah he's poor but now he's making it as if it's my fault. Facebook has something called donations, why not start a fund there, or crowdfunding, do some research. I'm sure there are fundings out there. Where am I suppose to get 50 000? I'm a student for goodness sake. I regret giving him money the first day. I didn't know that there are male gold diggers out there. I get that there is nowhere else he can get it but dude ...no...not

like this. It's always a situation where girls...want money. No no no that's not the case. I'm technically a blesser now. Without even knowing it.

We're now at the dinner table, he's cracking jokes talking like nothing happened. I decide to disturb.

Me: how's your sister?

Sam: still the same. We haven't got funding yet.

Mom: funding for what?

I don't tell her about the money I give him coz it wasn't necessary then.

Sam: my sister (he takes out his phone shows mom) here's her picture

Mom: Aww shame.

Dad: mmh

Mom: Xena look.

I take a look, a girl who looks alike him is in a hospital bed.

Sam: they took her to a public hospital in East London but she still needs to pay her fees and get the heart transplant. I didn't want to bring this up but since you asked.

Me: mmh

Mom: we can donate money for her

Sam: really?

Mom: yes, send us the bills.

Same: oh thank you so much. Thank you thank you.

Dad: that's what is called Ubuntu.

Along the conversation

Sam: tomorrow I'm leaving and I'm taking a cheap bus.

Mom: at least you'll get there.

Ps. He's from Alice, in the Eastern Cape.

Sam: it would be better if I had a car, sometimes we wait for a bus for too long. I remember the other time, we waited for two hours. And City to City isn't really good. It's uncomfortable so (with a sad face) if you can maybe buy me a car, it doesn't have to be new. Second hand maybe

This kid.... I hate him shame. Haibo. Mom and dad facial expressions...they are shocked yeva! I'm like "Yes!" You said you like him for me moss. Yah ...you see your "perfect future husband" it's obvious moss even if he has money he'll be going for high value things. I don't care even if he'll be a doctor. I know he'll have money one day but Thank you, next

Sam: you see, at least it can drive at my pace. I can visit my sister in hospital. I can drive them around. I won't be late for classes anymore (I'm like what does that have to do with a car?) If I can get maybe Toyota Fortuner or range rover. It can be better

Me: yehake Acrimony.

35

Mom: yemntana ndini yeka ukusisenga asizonkomo. (Don't milk us we are not cows)

Sam: hay ma I was just-

Mom: khawophume apha, tatakhe iphi laa mvubu (get out, where's the shambok)

Sam: xolo ma bendingayazi ukuba umzi ekuthandazwa kuwo unje (I didn't know a praying home was like this)

Dad came with the shambok, mom took it

Mom: uthin kwedin!

Sam is now afraid, he jumped off the chair straight to the door.

Mom: danku dankuza mna !!! Mihlola kaJames mntana otheni na loo Yuri madoda.

I'm looking at her like. You just got served!

Right then I received a call while mom is busy cursing and it's from my future wife.

I went to my room.

Lay on my bed

Me: hello baby

Isi: hey

Me: you sound down.

Isi: umm Xena I love you.

Me: I love you too babe

Isi: please forgive for this.

Me: about what?

Isi: I know I shouldn't be saying this over the phone but what we had is over. I don't want you to call me because I'll be changing my SIM after this call. I don't want you visiting my office, I'll find you another therapist. We can't go on like this. I'm sorry.

Tu Tu Tu

Call was dropped like a sauce.

I called her back,

"You reached the voice mail of 0757..."

What just happened?

Scar

I go by Scar, but my original name is Bongani Peter. And I'm not ashamed to say I am in love with Xena. She's boyish I know but

she's so cool in many ways. The way she laughs, the way she's so cocky. Y'all no one, when I say no one I mean no one has answered me the way she does. People respect me but her...she answers anyway which is kinda of a turn on for me. First few days around her I started noticing some changes on myself. I'm never that type of guy who has permanent girlfriends in fact I don't really do relationships but this time around every time she's near, I get goose bumps y'all like my body just acts a certain way. I try control it, try to be that tough Scar everyone knows until I couldn't anymore. I'm feeling Kabelo. I care about her, I want nothing bad happening on her, I know her past. I broke in Isi's office, leaving no trace but my sister has her ways of finding out. I know Kabelo been raped by some punk called Aaron. Although he's arrested_ Isiphile was the one who put him in jail_ I still want to teach him a lesson. There's something shady about him. When I search his name, he doesn't appear. I don't know his parents but I know we share the same surname. Plus me and my twin sister don't know our father. Which makes it more suspensicous

My thoughts go back to Kabelo. Argh that girl is driving me crazy. She's fun to be around and makes jokes, I'm not that type of person who laughs randomly bit this time around. She stole my heart

Sam

Yho I ran for my life. Being chased by a Shambok, just imagine. I've had enough of that in my life. I caught a taxi then went to take my bags in Res so I can go to the bus stop. My life is messed up, just when I thought I was gonna be rich and be married to a rich family, they see my plan. My sister is really dying and the situation at home isn't getting any better. It's had being raised from poverty. I wish I was born by rich parents but it is like this. I can't change it. Maybe if I get a sugar mama then things will be better. This side My scholarship is dropping me because I failed one module. Just one module. My life is a mess and no one is willing to help me.

Even the Pastor himself.

Only one plan, get a sugar mama.

Isiphile

A lot has happened today

it's 19:00. Thinking of how perfect my life was before all of this happened. I've seen it happen to other people but I didn't think it could happen to me.

Let me give you a flashback

So I just woke up, it's a new day. I'm on holidays my Gran calls

I pick up with a smile

Me: hello Gogo wam ndedwa (my only Gran)

Gran: hello my baby unjani kodwa(how are you?)

Me: I'm okay, everything is fine, I can't complain.

Gran: ngiyavuya ukuzwa lokho (I'm happy to hear that)

Line goes quiet, then she sighs deeply like she's troubled.

Me: Gogo uright?

Gran: ey mntanami kunzima (my child, it's difficult)

Me: kwenzakalani? Uwaphuza kahle ama ARVs akho? (What's happening, Do you drink your ARVs well?)

Gran: aysilokho mntanami (it's not that)

Me: pho yini inkinga (then what's the problem?)

Gran: yakhumbula ukuthi ukuze sifumane imali yokuthi I've siSpecial agent, sayfumana njani? (You remember how we got funds for being a special agent?)

Me: cha angсахumbuli Gogo (no I don't remember Grans)

Grand: I forget that you were young. We got money from this wealthy family saved it so you can go and be what you are today. In return you had to marry their son. Your mother used to work for them and you know the story of how she died. Years later I had to borrow money from them, and this is the deal they made, since they killed her and I was a threat. We agreed that once you're 21. You'll marry their son.

Me: you better be joking

Gran: I told Bongani, thinking he will tell you.

Me: you're selling me?

Gran: no it was for your own good. You remember the necklace?

Me: yes, mom said I should never take it off.

Gran: I want you to hide it where they can never find it because that's what your mother stole from them and once they see it. You're dead.

Tears flew on my face. I'm so young how can I get married now?

Gran: I'm sorry, that's how it's gonna be.

Me: so what if I love someone else.

Gran: it doesn't matter, you have to be married for at least a year till you give him a heir.

Me: Gogo I'll call you back.

The whole day I was sad, there is no other choice but to cut things off with X. Oh Xena.

I didn't think that playing around for a few days can lead me to fall this deep. It's just been few weeks of us dating and at the beginning I wasn't really sure whether I'm in this or not. But now I see how beautiful love can be, X is an amazing partner. A person who can call you at 03:00 just to tell me she misses me. I never planned to fall this deep. From the day she fucked me, I've been having this feeling of wanting her. Everytime I think of her, when I wake up I'm thinking of her. When I'm washing dishes ... I can't get her out of my head. It's crazy. Have you loved someone that even your heart hurts. You stop what you're doing just to think of them, you call, have crazy chats. Talk about the future, talk about having kids. This idea of an arranged marriage is death to me. I hate Grand for this.

According to her latest update. This coming week I have to go to my "husband's house" in Durban.

Sizwe

My location: Johannesburg in a penthouse with my fiancée,
Ayanda Kubayi. My parents told me that they have a perfect girl
for me bla bla bla. And they would want me to marry her.
Duh!!! The perfect girl is right here in front of me.

We're standing at the balcony with my Ayanda. I kiss her
shoulder

Me: I love you

Aya: I love you too my love

We kiss passionately.

36

Isiphile

I was still buried in my thoughts when I heard a door bell. I dragged my foot to the door only to find Bongani standing there.

Me: yeah?

I could sense the tension

Scar: since when have you become a lesbian?

Me: Scar please leave me alone. You are not going to detect the way I live my life.

Scar: I don't understand why? Why have you suddenly changed? Kabelo is my friend plus you're getting married

Me: I know, Gran just called me now. Argh can you stop causing head ache for me? (I'm now in tears) look what I could use now is your support.

I won't tell him I broke things off.

Scar: I can be your brother but I'll never trust you Isiphile.

Me: then get The FUCK out! Get out of my house then. I don't know how many times I should apologize to you.

Scar: look I'm not here to judge you or what? Can you care to explain to me what changed your sexuality?

Me: alright. I fell in love Bongani, simple as that. It's something I can't even control. I'm normal, I'm the same sister I was since we were born. My sexuality doesn't change the person I was. And Grans said we should unite and be one. I'm willing to do that, especially now Bongani. I'm in some deep shit. I'm being sold to some guy I hardly know.

I broke down then unexpectedly he hugged me.

Scar: it's okay, it will be fine some day.

Me: when will it be fine? Huh?

Silence, only my cries are heard

Tomorrow I'm going to Cape Town so they will start with the negotiations. My "husband" will be there also. I guess.

Sizwe

I woke up next to the love of my life. Thinking that I will be having two wives is just some huge turn off, how do I tell her that?

Once I'm married I'll move here in Jo'burg, my parents bought me this house and they own a surgery here so now I'll be in charge of it. I've always wanted to have surgery and this is a dream come true

Aya slowly opened her eyes only to find me staring at her, she smiled

Aya: you know staring is rude.

Me: I'm looking at what's mine.

Aya: mm(smiling) you look sad. What's eating you?

Me: nothing.

Aya: we've been together for a year even thou it was long distance but I know you. Something isn't right.

Me: okay you caught me.

She sat up straight.

Aya: what is it?

Me: it's my family sweetheart

Aya: what have they done?

Me: they want me to get married to this girl. And it's arranged marriage, I don't want this. I love you.

Aya: so what will happen to us?! We need to get married, tell them you can't.

Me: once I do. I won't get the surgery and I won't get the inheritance. Those are the consequences

Aya: then leave it. You don't have to get them.

Me: you're crazy Ayanda. If they don't matter to you, I don't care. Look baby I can marry her then marry you

Aya: I will not be in a polygamous marriage.

Me: baby don't you want to be rich?

Aya: I do.

Me: I don't love her. I won't ever love her.

Aya: you're nuts! Listen here Sizwe until you get some balls to talk to your parents, that's when I'll come back to you. You hear me?

She got out of bed and packed her clothes.

Me: where are you going?

Aya: I'm going to my flat.

Me: babe please

I begged her but she won't listen, she packed then left me like that. So today is the day. I'm going for lobola negotiations. My

first priority isn't love, it's money simply because love doesn't bring food the table. I hope I've made myself clear

Xena

I've been sad

Advertisement

a break up isn't easy. I remember how I was on my first heart break. This reminds me of that. Love doesn't want me, I fall to deep. That's my problem. You know instead of mopping, feeling sorry for myself. I'll just fuck and pass. I'm serious. I thought relationships were the right way but now I'm like nahh that shit ain't for me. I know a lot of people want me so I'm gonna use that to my advantage, only girls thou. I can't do guys. That's not how I roll. It's been a week after my break up and currently I'm eating snacks in the kitchen, mom is around and dad at work. It's one of those lazy days by the way today Sizwe and his "wife" are coming this side. I'm so excited to meet this girl, finally my brother is getting married.

"Kabelo yizapha(come here)"

I wonder what is it. I went to her and she's in my room holding my phone. This woman is crazy. What happened to privacy?

Mom: ngubani u "future wifie" (who is..)

I forgot to change that, to delete them even, she is still on my mind even thou we don't talk.

Me: it's my friend.

Mom: and the "I love you's" , hearts, kissing emojis. Kabelo I thought we talked about this.

I sat on the bed

Me: mom I think it's time you understand that I like girls. I've never had feelings for guys please understand mom or accept it like that.

Mom: no I will not accept satanism in my house Kabelo and you dropped Medicine. You dropped Medicine Kabelo !!!

My heart starts racing. Is she gonna beat me? I am in trouble in deep deep pits!

Me: you went through my emails?

Mom: I give up. I'm so disappointed in you. You know we will stop paying your fees because you decide to live life the way you desire. I want the best for you. Where will music take you? Huh? Will you make money? You go changing course thinking you'll be Zahara someday.

Me: that's not the type of music I will do. I'm more into instruments, trumpet, Violin, guitar, piano. I want to compose my own music, write songs please ma let me follow my passion.

Mom: there is no guarantee that will work. I will not have a musician in my house. Who do you know as a musician in this family? Everyone is highly educated and then BOOM there's Dj X , Dj KB hay hay hay

We heard hoot.a

Mom: go open the gate, Sizwe and his wife are here.

Me: they aren't married yet.

Rolling my eyes

Mom: the wedding is tomorrow. Everything is organised for them so we might as well say they are traditionally married because lobola has been paid.

Me: whatever mom.

I pressed the gate remote then the car got in.

I waited for them in the sitting room fixing dinner plates. Dad should be coming back home by now it's already 17:00

Sizwe first walked in the sitting room

Me: hey bro

I went for first bump

Me: where's your wife? (Excited)

Sizwe: she's still in the car.

We hear footsteps coming towards so me being me I peeked (ukukroba) through the door and what is Isiphile doing here? Something doesn't add up. She lifted her eyelids then our eyes locked.

37

Isi: X ?

Me: Lerato?

She fake smiled.

Isi: what are you doing here?

Me: I should be asking you the same question.

Sizwe: wait you guys know each other?

Isi: she's my student. Don't worry.

Me: you're married?

Isi: yes

Me: are you happy?

Isi: (hesitate) ...yes.

This is too much for me but I have to act normal. I can't reveal that I once had a thing with her. This took me by shock, I wasn't expecting this at all. Why her out of all the girls Sizwe could have chosen? Why would he marry the love of my own life? Life is unfair.

Maybe all along she was dating him and she didn't even let me know. Isiphile is selfish, she's a crook and ugly. Okay she's not ugly but this girl is driving me nuts!

Dad eventually came and we are eating playing happy families

Mom: I'm so proud of you Sizwe.

I glanced at Isi, she is looking down like a real wife. This breaks my heart why my brother? Huh? Why him?

Mom: ...Xena?

Me: huh?

Mom: you agree she is pretty.

Me: yeah

Mom: mhle loo mntana (she's beautiful)

After dinner mom takes over the dishes while Isi helps her. They seem to be talking well fake chatting coz mom was forcing it.

Sizwe: so what was that tension between you guys about?

Me: nothing.

Sizwe: it's just the way you looked at each other.

Me: there is nothing going on Sizwe. You have trust issues with your "soon to wife" that's not a good start. Try improving on that.

I left him then went to my room. I texted Liam and Caleb I know they are at some party some where. Done! I'm going out today.

I don't care what my mother says I'm going out. Period! I took my VW polo keys then went to Mlazi. That's where the party is at. Other family members were also arriving all that boring ish so I won't really be noticed.

Me: boy!!

That's when I came across with Liam at the party (club)

Liam: ntwana!!!!

We do a brotherly hug.

Me: wow look at you. You look blessed!

Liam: thanks but look at you! you gained some muscles. You've been working out?

Me: kinda... what's Poppin!

Liam: nothing big. Just vibing let's go to Caleb.

We went to take seats saw Caleb, chatted drank our lives out. Smoked! At first they were surprised but eventually let that slide.

My favourite part is this one.

3 chicks came to us each person got their girl Ku busy nje. The girl I got is a dark skinned girl. I'm into girls like that.

Me: what's your name?

Girl: Kele

Me: mh nice name for a beautiful lady, you can call me KB

I licked my lips.

Kele: nice to meet you KB

Her skin colour reminds me of Alex. I don't know why I have her in my thoughts now but...

Me: let me get you a drink.

I ordered using my mom's black card. Don't tell her I took it. After that I started kissing her, she didn't hesitate but kiss back.

I'm rubbing on her thighs letting my hand slide in her skirt

Kele: let's take this to the bedroom.

She got up pulling my hand. Shuuuu!!!! I feel so hot. Once we get there I'm hungry for some pussy I pin her on the wall just like the way I did with Isi. I kiss her shoulder with my hand brushing her thighs then I put my Lastex glove for protection. And the rest remains untold. Okay I'm lying, I fucked her brains out, got her screaming CRAZY. Gave her multiple orgasms and played with that pussy.

I repeated the process till I felt satisfied then after that she slept on my arms. I'm drunk but not that drunk so while she's still sleeping I put my t-shirt on coz, it's the only item I had

taken off. Disclaimer: I don't let girls get into my you know I don't want no one touching that area. Ever since I started dating I'm sure y'all noticed. I just don't let people that deep in me you feel me.

I took my car keys then stambled to my car, I've never driven drunk but today I am. I will do just fine, I started the car then drove off I don't even know where Caleb and Liam went so I'm leaving them. I drove...along the way....the road isn't clear

I see blurry but I continue driving till I'm at the gate, at home precisely. I'm an expert moss just when I thought "gquzuuuuuu skrrrrrrrr rrrrrr" airbags came out. I'm too shocked to even move. I hit the stop nonsense (the wall) next to the gate. I thought I was getting in but I didn't think that... I don't know what's happening. I ended up sleeping there.

Next thing I hear people knocking at the window. I woke up then wheeled the window down. Mom

Mom: Kabelo uright? (Seems worried)

Mom: kutheni kunuka utywala apha? (Why is it smelling alcohol?)

At this point I'm just

I woke up in my bed. When did I get here?

The sun is out. Okay.

My head is throbbing, shit! I'm never drinking again. I hear loud noises of people ululating, shit my head. I'm serious. I swear I won't ever drink again. Please remind me if I do. This pain!

The door opens and mom comes in.

Mom: finally you woke up. Get up and get dressed, the wedding is starting in a few minutes.

I slowly got up my mind started playing some events I'm not even sure happened. Did I crush my car? No that's not possible.

Mom: Kabelo.

Me: maahh

Mom: when this is over I want you out of these premises. I talked to your father about the car crash you caused and I came to that decision. So you are leaving this house because you are one piece of headache. You will be allowed to attend family things but you will not live under my roof. We won't pay fees for you, that R100 000 and something you owe, you will pay it yourself and I'll take your car in Jo'burg. Kabelo you even took my black card! Kabelo ha.a I don't know what you want me to do shame. Yhuu hay I wash my hands. You are trouble if you were a boy we would do circumcision for you.

Hurry up, your clothes are on the couch.

After that she left.

Yho I just woke up and this happens.

I feel so bad so I really crashed a car? I took a look at this outfit. It's a suit with normal trousers and blazer and it's my size.

I read a note From Isiphile

"I won't say much but please understand that this wasn't my choice, lets meet at the back yard (garden) today at 23:00. And Xena, I love you."

My heart melted. She said she loves me!!! But she's marrying my brother? I can't wait to hear this out.

I did my hygiene routine rethinking what just happened. From being a rich kid to being poor in a few minutes. I won't let that happen so I called Scar. He picked up instantly

Scar: hey

Me: hi

Scar: I'm quite surprised you called.

Me: um I wanted to tell you that I broke things off with Isi and now I want to join the gang again. And when is the next gig again?

Scar: easy easy, what's the rush?

Me: ey I need money dude. I'm in serious need of money right now.

Scar: mmm okay. I'll tell you the details about the job when were in Johannesburg. In fact when are you coming to the wedding? I've been waiting to see you.

Me: I'm still in the shower.

Scar: In the shower?

Me: yeah

Scar: with a phone?

My bad,

Me: okay I'm about to take a shower. Good bye Scar, I heard what I wanted to hear.

38

At last I entered the church just when the priest said "you may kiss the bride". Sizwe pecked her cheek then people ululating.

I'm not sure whether I should sit or what coz people now are going out. Okay we are going outside, yho I've never been this late.

There were too many people, at last I met Scar. We talked, having cocktails, told him what my mom did.

Me: and that is that.

Scar: you can crash at our apartment.

Me: your apartment?

Scar: you know I live with Mandla and Fred.

Me: that's better. So when you do your estimates how much will I get?

Scar: umm since it's your first job 10K

Me: you better be joking.

In my mind I'm like I owe more than 100K and this is what I'll get? Which means I'll have to do more gigs.

After the wedding, apparently the "couple" will go to Jo'burg to their new house bla bla bla. I'm still waiting on today's date with Isi. I wanna hear what she will say, you feel me.

The day went on, they were given a lot of gifts. I was tired mainly because I went out last night and I hang over . Around 19:00 I went to take a nap, coz I couldn't take it anymore plus I drank just a little so.

I woke up, my head feels so heavy. I took my phone to look at the time. It's 11:00 am Saturday and I had to meet Isi yesterday at 23:00 so practically I missed the whole thing. I scrolled through my phone finding her missed calls and voice messages. I feel so guilty, why didn't my alarm ring? I checked if it was set and it is. I called her, it went through voicemail. I got up went to the kitchen bumping on people till I met mom.

Mom: uselapha(still here?)

Me:where is the bride and Sizwe?

Mom: kudalooo bahambayo. Bavuke ngo nwi bakhwela inqwelomoya, baya kwelase Goli. (They left. They woke up very early and went to Jo'burg)

Me: without even a goodbye?

Mom: ubulele nje (you were sleeping)

Me: oh okay

Mom: when are you going to leave ? The wedding is over now.

So mom was really serious.

Mom: unuka no tywala (whispering)

I ignored her then went to pack my things, oh I didn't read all my messages. I scrolled through and ummm...no I can't tell you this but it's something making me smile.

I made the bed singing to one of my favourite songs. Afire love by Ed Sheeran.

I'm so happy

Okay I changed the song to " clap along if you feel like a room with out roof because I'm happy clap along if you feel like happiness is youuuuhu"

Me: Because I'm happy.

Okay so this is what happened. I received no no I'm not telling you.

I packed my clothes mom walked in to "check"

Mom: those are my clothes leave them.

Me: okay but I need to take a shower so I can leave you for good. You know mom, one day you will regret each an everything you did to me. You know your favourite Aaron is in jail.

Mom: they pinned the case on him. He is innocent.

Me: Innocent?

Mom: yes, they said he raped some 16 year old he was dating with then some PI nton nton framed him but he ended up pleading guilty.

Me: so he wasn't arrested because of me?

Mom: no. He was arrested because of that stupid 16 year old girlfriend. He was found guilty, it's so sad that innocent man are jailed for rape for years yet they did nothing. Besides there is no proof he raped you. In fact Aaron is too sweet for that.

Me: get the fuck out of my room

Mom: ngumzi wam loo. (This is my house) go have your own house so you can rule.

I ignored her and went to the shower stressed out. How can he not be arrested for my case. He raped me and my case isn't taken into consideration. So they take his word over mine? That's what the police is doing. I get that I don't have proof but the least they could have done is hear my side of the story. The Franz squad is out there rejoicing or gang raping other kids like Aaron did and me knowing that there are such people. I'm doing nothing about it. The police are doing nothing about it. No one is taking action! This is why some people never talk because they will want proof which off its very stupid! Why

don't they have lie detector then? I don't know but this issue is making me so emotionally drained and weak. I feel less of a woman. It doesn't matter whether I am a stud(lesbian) or what but I deserve my rights as a woman. Or was it because I'm a stud? And those police are against that too. Enough is enough! I need to be the voice to the voiceless, I was brave enough to tell my mom other people are too scared to even talk. At least I was able to talk about it. What about those who are afraid? This has to end. I don't know how I'm going to raise this awareness but I feel like it's very necessary. Anyways I thank Isiphile for putting that man behind bars, for investigating and using her funds. We need woman like that.

Period!

After taking a shower I changed into other clothes. Mom won't make me take them off moss. Okay so Scar sent me R5000 that's what got me happy and he gave me a plane ticket. Y'all Scar is a brother to keep, he cares about me like no body's business even thou we fight (rolling my eyes)

Sometimes when I think of my life without these three guys. Tears just flow. Guys...I'm sorry ..I'm writing this very emotional. Have you ever had friends that you connect to in another level. Like you love them to bits dude . I don't know how to describe it. I love those guys and my life without the SFMX has been hell for me. I constantly think of them and

charish the good times we had. I cry sometimes thinking of how wonderful and happy my life has been with them in it. I know it's been three months but it feels like I have known them for a lifetime. I love those guys with my heart but I'm not that type of person who begs. That's why I didn't beg for their friendship even thou I knew I'm dying inside. I was stupidity in love and now I feel like I'm falling out of love buhhh I was still saying. I love how they always treat me as their little princess with them I always feel like I'm wearing a tiara. Argh I love them so much!!!!

SFMX for life. That means (Scar Fred Mandla Xena) that's our name.

And then there is Isiphile. That's a story for another day.

I'm currently at OR Thambo airport the guys are here to pick me up.

I ran to them we group hugged. Then went the car drove to the apartment.

Holidays are over on Monday which is tomorrow coz now it's Sunday morning. We are going to school. And we were now preparing for the gig, that was after I took a 2 hour nap.

Scar: so our mission today is to cause an accident on 3 fidelity cars. That's the goal. KB you do the shooting

Me: why me?

He gives me a deadly stare

Me: okay noted

Scar: and then Mandla and Fred you take the money. I'll be with you while I'm on watch for the police. And there will be two other guys who will go with us. So the cars

(Driving toy cars on the Gauteng map)

Will be coming from Pretoria to Santon. We meet them at Centurion that's where this will happen and KB will do the shotting.

Me: but Scar why should I be starting. I'm new to this

Scar: fine Kabelo I'll help you on that.

Me: sounds better (pouting)

A smirk or smile creped on his face but it disappeared before I could figure it out.

Scar: alright I think we should go over the plan again before we go to the warehouse. Ummm there something I forgot to mention.

KB tomorrow we will be receiving a shipment from Cape Town. I want you to check the system make sure everything is

balancing when it arrives and Mandla, Fred you know the drill, I don't think I should be telling you your duties by now.

Mandla and Fred: yes boss

Boss? Oh skrrrrr I'm not calling him that

Me: so Bongani when you say t-

Scar: I am your boss when we're working

I hold a laugh. I want to laugh so bad that I couldn't hold it anymore I just burst out laughing.

Scar: what's so funny?

I continued laughing, Scar smirked then took out a gun. I froze instantly. Laughter gone in just a second

Scar: care to explain what you're laughing at.

Me: dude you don't scare me (trying to act brave)

He put the gun on my throat, Mandla and Fred are watching scared asf!

Scar: say that one more time I'll cut your throat with this gun.

He gave me a deadly stare. My heart starts throbbing fast

Me: you don't scare me.

He closed his eyes in disbelief, clenching his jaws, veins popping

Scar: wow, can you tell her what I'll do to her.

I'm now scared but I wanna see what he will do.

Me: do it.

Scar: still talking (looking at me with red eyes)

Me: do it Scar.

He pulled the trigger and I closed my eyes hard and nothing came out. He opened the place where bullets stay and there is nothing.

Scar: behave Xena.

And with that I let out a deep breath I didn't think I was holding then we continued planning.

39

By the end of the day we got a stack of cash, the job is done. Everything went as planned and I got more than I expected 50K So that will first go to Scars club so we can clean it then pay for my school fees.

So we are chilling here with the guys, celebrating our success just then we hear a knock at the door.

Mandla went to open and Isiphile at the door. I forgot that she existed. Don't get me wrong but life just took its turns. I don't do begging that much and a lot has been happening Today I forgot to call her back.

She walked in with all two guns on her waist in professional special agent clothes.

I took a sip on my juice, while everyone got up.

Isi: good morning

We greeted back

Isi: 3 fidelity cars were found in an accident and the money gone. Do you have anything to do with this?

Okay I see why Scar kinda hates his sister. Maybe she got close to me in hopes of finding information about them. I really don't know

Scar: no. As you can see we here, we did nothing wrong sister.
And Isiphile can you stop suspecting us all the time.

Isi: if you say so.

Scar: are you done?

Isi: No. Can I talk to Xena?

Me: oh okay talk

Isi: in private.

Scar: you're not going Kabelo

Me: I won't be told by you what to do.

I know what she wants to talk about is not related to whatever they think. We walked to her car.

Me: first before we start this conversation, can you stop doing this.

Isi: what did I do?

Me: you terrorising us. We did nothing wrong and you're ganging up on us.

Isi: I'm sorry I won't do it again.

Me: good.

Isi: you bailed out on me.

Me: I was drunk and I slept.

Isi: do you know how that makes me feel? I thought that you were gonna come, I waited in the cold for you X but you didn't come.

Me: I'm sorry Isi.

Isi: it's fine.

Me: so you love Sizwe?

Isi: it was an arranged marriage. I don't love him plus Sizwe doesn't even look at me that way.

Me: why did you agree on marrying someone you don't love?

Isi: because I had to. But Xena I love you.

I kept quiet

Isi: I love you Xena.

She pecked my lips, I didn't kiss back.

Me: I don't trust you.

Isi: why?

Me: I feel like you could sell us. Isiphile please understand that it's not by choice. Circumstances put me in the situation and if I get arrested then my life is over.

Isi: you can live with me. I'm sure Sizwe won't mind, he's your brother after all.

Me: umm I'll think about that.

Isi: I love you X

She kissed my neck. I let out a shaking breathe

She got on top of me damn she's taking control

Me: I love you too Isi

I grab her but as she's grinding on me.

She takes my shirt off then lays kisses my neck to chest then brushes my boobs

Me: ahh!

She squeezed them, sucked them grabbing as I was moaning she went back to my neck sucked my neck softly pulling my skin. I groaned as she moaned she kissed me down to my stomach. A heart melting sensation overwhelms me, I'm patting. Shit! She just touched down there with her hand. I jumped off

Me: please don't touch that.

Isi: why not?

Me: I don't feel comfortable.

Isi: but you touch me.

Me: please understand Isi.

Isi: understand what? Xena you've been fucking some girl at some party and that was a total stranger but you don't want me to touch you.

I feel so bad but I don't know how she knew about that and me feeling uncomfortable has nothing to do with rape but I just don't feel comfortable in having a vagina I'm not sure if I'm making sense. It's so weird and scary, I can't find it in my heart to embrace that but I recognise myself as a woman even thou I am one.

I hate labels. Like you're female, you're male if it would go by me then I would be neither.

Or I would most likely recognise myself as a male but because I have a vagina I see myself as a woman even thou I don't want to. I'm not sure if I'm making sense but that's basically how I feel.

Me: look Isi I'm sorry.

Isi: You know what (crying) I hate you!

Me: I love you and you were right when you said it's over. I don't think that this is the right time for us. Maybe we met too early, bye Isiphile.

I wore my shirt then went back inside. I can't bring myself to explain my feelings towards this. I'm dating a straight girl y'all and this wouldn't make sense to her as much as it doesn't make sense for me.

Sizwe

I'm in the kitchen trying to make myself breakfast so I can go to work.

It's 04:00 and my so called wife is not home. What a wife I have. I don't regret marrying her because I'm now two times richer than I was. As for Ayanda

I didn't really love her, but I liked her she's kind sweet and good. I proposed because I felt like I owe that to her and since my friends are all married, talk about peer pressure. In her head I'm still going to think things through and make a decision of marrying her. If she doesn't want to be in a pologamy

marriage then that's her loss. There are many women out there for me to be chasing after her.

Just when I thought of calling Isiphile she walks in the kitchen sad. And smelling a man's cologne.

Me: where have you been?

Isi: it's not like you care.

Me: are you cheating on me?

She's making life hard for me. How am I suppose to convince her to tell me where she kept this necklace containing info about Xena's parents.

Isi: no I'm not cheating on you dammit!

I swear I know that scent. It smells familiar.

Me: hey don't talk to me like that

Isi: Mxm

I slapped her twice. She looked shocked

Isi: ha

Me: that's what you will get for not listening. Do not go anywhere unannounced. You hear me?

Isi: umm (scared)

Me: do you hear me?

Isi: yes

Me: good now cook for your husband.

Xena

It's 26 of April, 2016 tomorrow is freedom Day. We're staying in me and the boys. Life has been quite tough for me emotionally coz a lot of things happened. I had to cut things off with Isi for the sake of my sexuality and how I view myself. I'm confused. I don't know what I want. Dating is the last option even though Scar sometimes tries I'm not sure if I'd call it flirting. It's quite cute thou.

Some people are lucky, if you were born and from the get go you knew which gender you are, you knew who you were attracted too then you're blessed. I'm starting to have weird feelings around Scar which didn't exist before. I'm a mess. I do like girls I'm sure about that but honestly I don't know what's happening to me and at the same time I don't see myself dating my ex's brother. How would I seem. Ummmm... It's hard. Please bare with me. Please don't judge me for who I am. It's just the situation sometimes..... sometimes I think of being transgender. Like having a dick being installed on me but I'm not sure if that is what I want. I am ashamed to say that line but

I'm still in the process. I'm still trying to figure myself out and then there is Scar... I will end it there (rolling my eyes)

It's been a week since I last spoke to Isiphile and I have opened a campaign named hashtag women's lives matter. So basically I'll be doing awareness about rape and gender based violence. Stuff like that and I'm really looking forward to it. I am passionate about this because I feel like I have a duty to speak on behalf of other people. I want to be that person who gives voice to the voiceless. Domestic abuse must stop, rape must stop and there must be equality between both genders. The "man of the house" rule ended long ago. I hope to reach as many people as I can coz this issue is serious. It's like having a vagina is a sin. Women are getting lost everyday. It's heartbreaking. Women don't feel safe. I'm lucky I got friends that care about my safety, constantly checking up on me. Calling me if I'm not around. Those are the kinds of man we need. At some point I thought maybe Scar would do the same as Aaron did but he proved me wrong. He proved that he can be normal because the way I view it. If you are a male and you don't beat women, you don't kill women, you don't rape, you are not a hero or special. You are normal. Our society is full of people who do these things to the extent that the way we view things changed too.

And here is the thing we know that so and so has been raped but how many rapists do we know?

It's the reality and it's heartbreaking, it's really heartbreaking to have to teach females how to protect themselves instead of teaching males on how a woman is treated. Our education system excludes a lot of important stuff. If we go on like this these issues will remain unresolved. I'm sorry to talk like this but rape isn't something new. This goes back to the year where Jesus was still alive. When there was a king I'm not sure if it's a king but this person had many wives and then he saw this girl washing herself while she was on her periods and the king forced himself on her See it's something that has been existing for years that I don't even know how many years
Ummmm I'll type later coz right now I'm quite...

Vathiswa

Today we have a service. Me and my husband are pastors at this church which has people that are rich. People donate R 20 000 and above. We make good money. Back in the day we were gangsters but that stopped since we were once arrested. So we changed our lives since then which was 2004. We killed many people, many lives were taken and now we serve the leaving

living Lord. It's 2016 and we started a church last year. Everything has been going great. The money is more than we ever imagined. The church is getting full every service.

Me: if you have an injury and you need prayers please come forward.

Keyboard is playing

Me: (singing) uJesu uyahalela aphenhule umkhuleko

My husband gave me DOM for mosquitoes as people came in front. I sprayed it on the people then made them drink Handy Andy.

Keyboard is playing on the back ground

I prayed for a man that was in a wheelchair then he stood up and walked with his own legs. People clapped hands for me.

I spoke in tongues, people started praying.

Me: I can feel the spirit!!! Spirit!!!!!!

People prayed then money came in envelopes, the washing basket we used was full.

At the end of the service people came thanking me and my husband and gave us more money

40

After lectures I went to the Psychology department. I wanted to book an appointment maybe talking to someone about my emotions will help and it's not going to be Isiphile because of what happened between us.

When I got there Ayanda was at the reception.

Ayanda: hey you.

Me: umm can I get someone else to help me other than you?

Ayanda: listen Kabelo I am sorry about that day. I wasn't aware that you would be triggered that way. Please understand it was my first day and I was tired, overwhelmed. I'm sorry

Me: it's okay, I forgive you Ayanda.

Ayanda: thank you

She comes and hugs me then hangs her hands around my neck, her legs in the air. This is weird but I hug back. Okay this is too long than it should have been

"What's happening here?" I quickly pulled out and Isiphile is standing by door angry.

Me: nothing.

Isi: this doesn't look like nothing! Ayanda what are you doing?

Ayanda: you took my man so what's the problem with me taking your hot (staring at me) cake ?

Isi: don't mess with my property

One minute they are staring at each other next minute they are on each others throat

Me: ladies !

I separate them pulling Isiphile's hand to her office then locked.

Me: do you value your job?

She's still fuming

Me: Lerato I'm talking.

Isi: yes Xena I do but what was she doing in your arms?

Me: she was apologizing.

Isi: in your arms?

Me: look I don't know why she hugged me like that and what man was she talking about?

The mood change into complete silence

Me: Rato?

Isi: apperantly she was Sizwe's fiance then they broke up because of me. Well what happened is "she" gave Sizwe time to

think things through, the "thinking" became marriage for Sizwe and now we aren't getting along because of that.

Me: that's hectic, really mind blowing. I'd be angry too if that happened to me.

Isi: I understand but she mustn't put her frustration on me and you. You did nothing

I smirk, this girl is into me deep. I can see it.

Isi: I understand that we aren't together anymore but please respect the boundary of not dating my friend.

Me: I will. That's easy plus I don't really like Ayanda. She's too much and annoying

Isi bursts out laughing

Isi: I know

We high fived laughing I stopped mid way just to took a stare at her. She's beautiful! That dimple and smooth skin, her white teeth completes the look. Shit! What is she doing on me.

Isi: what?

Me: huh?

Isi: do I have something on my mouth ?

Me: No (walking closer) you have something here

I brushed her cheek then leaned closer, our lips touched then we started kissing passionately, dipping my hand on her back. I'm hungry for her. I want every inch of that hot body on me. All of her against me. She brushed my back lowering her hand down to my butt oh goodness! Did she just pressed it. I let out a moan this is going to be one nice make out

When I'm within the kiss, feeling it when she pulls out and asks the most ridiculous question I c-

Isi: what did you come here for?

I didn't answer that but instead I pulled her back against my body kissed her pulling her body on mine. Excitement filled my body, adrenaline rushes fast on me as she dips her hands on my back and I putting my hand on her pant- did she just moved my hand? Then pulled out.

Me: why did you do that?

Isi: we're not having sex in the office.

Me: I miss you.

I kiss her neck, sucked it she lets out a moan

Me: please Isi.

Isi: okay but on one condition.

Me: yes

Isi: I get to touch you too.

Okay this is getting serious but I'm hungry for her, I'll deal with that when it happens.

I can't believe I agreed to this just because I missed licking her.

Me: okay

I took her clothes off then there was a knock at the door.

The door knob moved. At least we locked.

She wore her clothes in a rush the knock continued door knob moving

Isi: coming!

She walks to the door while I sat down pretending to be having a consultation.

Isi: Sizwe

Sizwe: why did you take long?

Isi: consultation.

He walks in catching my eye.

Me: hey brother.

Sizwe: hello sister.

He gave Isiphile flowers

Isi: thanks honey

Honey? Since when do they use pet names or I should keep quiet because this doesn't involve me?

Sizwe:(to Isi) I'm sorry about what I did earlier. I'm also sorry to interrupt your consultation but do you mind me asking why you kept the door locked?

Isi: it's just that I don't like being interrupted in my sessions. Xena was leaving actually.

Me: I was?

Isi: you said you finished asking questions

Me: oh yeah I did. (Fake laughing)

And with that I had to leave coz the "couple" wants to talk.

Later in the day Isi sent me a text saying that

"Hey X, I'm sorry about what happened earlier on. I think it's best if we don't get together again. I don't want to make Sizwe angry because that will lead me to trouble. I'm sorry for leading you on I hope you can find it in your heart to forgive me and eventually move on with your life. Maybe our love will exist in another world or we met too late or too early but Xena our thing really won't work out. As you said. It's best if we cut ties maybe if you would use a psychologist in town things would be better. I wish you all the best of luck with your life. "

When I'm at the end

Advertisement

I'm reading this text with little tears prickling on my eyes.

Currently I am in the apartment with the guys around but they don't notice because they are playing FIFA.

Mandla: I won!!!

Game over is displayed while Scar is sulking

Scar: let's play again

Mandla: I won, I beat Scar, I won!!!!!!

I chuckled at that because Mandla is being so dramatic.

Me: I'll play with you Scar.

Scar: with you?

Me: yes

Scar: Nope thank you next.

Me: I won't make myself win then let's play

Scar looked at me for a second then he agreed.

Mandla: guys before you proceed I wanted to let you know that I am leaving for home today since it's a long weekend. I'll come back on 1 May.

Me: why are you leaving?

Mandla: I miss home.

Fred: I won't go KB so chill.

Scar: me too.

Mandla: so I'm leaving now coz my plane leaves at 18:00

We drive him to the airport, said our goodbyes and with that he left us. This is so sad. When we got back I went straight to bed. Ohh I forgot to update y'all so since this apartment has three bedrooms, Scar allowed me to use his room while he sleeps on the couch. That was so nice of him.

Just when I walked in his room

Scar: heeeeeey

I turned

Scar: we aren't done playing.

It's late at night and he still wants to play.

Me: I'm sleepy

Fred: me too, in fact I'm going to sleep.

He went to his room.

Me: okay Bongani Game on!!!

We played FIFA in my drowsiness, unexpectedly he won.

Me: you got what you wanted, let me go to sleep.

Scar: please bring me my blankets.

Me: sure

I took his blankets from his room then gave him.

Me; don't you wanna switch? You sleep in your room today then I sleep here.

Scar: no it's fine.

Me: I'm serious Scar, I don't mind sleeping here or maybe sleep in Mandla's room.

Scar: we don't sleep in each others rooms. It's called Privacy.

Me: okay so Good night then.

Scar: on second thought, how we sleep together in my room.

Me: ewwww (I threw my hat at him playfully) you're disgusting.

I went to his room then locked, got in my PJs then went to Lala land.

Following day, 27 April 2016

I woke up early to do my assignment and read for my upcoming test. I don't know how long that took but it was for a long time. Till a door disturbed me. I went to check, Fred with a sports bag?

Me: good morning

Fred: morning and goodbye

Me: where are you going?

Fred: my parents house. They just called today and are waiting for me in the parkings so Yeap I'll be back when the long weekend is over thou.

Me: why are you guys leaving me?

Fred: I'm so sorry pumpkin.

He buried me in a hug

Fred: I'll miss you

Me: I'll miss you too.

Fred: please tell Scar when he wakes up.

Me: sure

He kissed my forehead and with that he left.

It's around 10 am and Scar is still sleeping. No this is not how it's done. I went to the couch then took all of his blankets, he shifts then continues sleeping. So he's not wakiing up huh?

I went to the sink and poured water in the jag, walked straight at him water then 1 2 3

Scar: what are you doing?

Shit! I thought he was asleep...

41

My heart started beating fast. He got up like he's gonna beat me up or something so I poured the water on him

Scar: TF!!!!!!

I ran outside while he chased me, I got in the elevator (lift) just when it was about to close phewwww

When the lift opened, Scar is standing in front of it. When did he get here? I pressed the close button and it's too late coz he just walked in.

Me: I'm sorry

There's no one else but us.

Scar: be prepared to pay.

Me: I'm deeply sorry Scar I thought you were gonna do something.

He came close to me, my heart starts racing more. He held my hands up against the wall. I'm patting, I'm scared what will he do? He presses my hands more against the wall till I felt excruciating pain

Me: Scar please stop

He leaned in on my face, he's not going to kiss me. No he's not, I close my eyes tight as I could feel his face moving closer

Me: please

Heart beating fast then I felt something touching my ear.

It's so ticklish, no I can't take it. I burst in laughter, so he's tickling me using his mouth on my ear.

I opened my eyes noticing how muscular he is gosh this guy is blessed and he has a flower tattoo on his shoulder. He chuckled on my ear gosh my body shivers, a hot feeling suddenly overwhelms me. Then he finishes me off with a whisper.

Scar: you have a cute laughter but I'm not done with you.

Nqiii !!

The lift opens then he holds my hand as we walk back to our apartment. In my mind I'm like ncohh he's holding my hand until he pinched the edges of my skin. Holding my wrist tight

Me: ouch!! Scar, I'm sorry

Scar: I forgive you but-

He scans his iris (eye) on the door then the door opened, we walked in

Scar: I have a punishment for you.

Me: you're mad. I'm not doing that

He tightens his grip giving me a deadly stare.

Me: ouch!!

Scar: young lady, you will pay unless you want to sleep outside today.

Me: fine

He let me go then I rubbed my wrists.

Me: look at what you've done. Look they are red.

Scar: you deserved it.

He was now folding the blankets.

Scar: please help me with this blanket

Me: I don't want to.

Scar: you're testing me?

Me: yes

He chuckled cynically not believing what I just said then he gives me a long nerve wrecking stare. I stared at his greenishblackish eyes. He sure is scary now, I'm starting to shake but I balance myself on the table to prevent showing it

Me: I'm not scared of you.

He breaks the eye contact.

Me: I won!!!

Scar: tsek!!!

We both chuckled at that like nothing happened.

Scar: since you are on strike, I'll cook breakfast for myself.

Me: is it still breakfast? It's 10:30

Scar: yes because it's still AM

Me: ok then I'm out of here

I went to his room to make the bed, cleaned a little then he gave me the blankets.

Scar: so now my room belongs to me.

Me: yep.

I handed him the keys.

Scar: you know if we can just share the room. It would be better plus today it's cold!

Me: I'm not down for that.

Scar: it was a suggestion.

I ignored that then went to the kitchen to do coffee for myself.

Scar: me too please

Just because I was in a good mood I made one for him too.

Scar: and bread with Cheese and eggs.

Me: didn't you just say you'll make your own breakfast?

Scar: yeah that was before I saw you in the kitchen area.

Me: you're pain in the ass.

I made the eggs and cheese he wanted

Then handed him

Scar: ohh I forgot mention that it should be toasted. I'm sorry

I rolled my eyes clicking my tongue then put it in the toaster while he laughs at me.

Finally he's eating, and I'm minding my own business, scrolling through my WhatsApp statues.

Scar: what are your plans for today?

I removed my eyes from the phone screen then looked at him

Me: nothing, why?

Scar: I was thinking we should watch a movie.

Me: that's a great idea, which one?

Scar: Ummm I like action movies. I'm not sure about you?

Me: yeah that's fine but I'm more into horror movies thou.

Scar: we can watch your horror movies then.

Me: no it's cool Action movies it is.

Scar: Fast and furious?

Me: yep, I'll be making pop corns

Scar: I'll be setting the mood

I chuckled at that

he joined in then went to open TV

At last it's all set, so the heater is on pop corns are ready and let the movie begin.

I don't really know what happened coz I slept throughout and woke up when the movie ended.

I'm shocked realising I was sleeping on his chest! When did I
?!!!

And he's also fast asleep, when I untangled myself he flicks his eyes open

Me: sorry to wake you up but can you let me go

Scar: where are you going?

Me: dude let me go

I'm really mad at him now

Scar: okay but before I let you go. You have to give me an answer to this question.

Me: yeah

He pulls me closer to his heart to the extent i hear his heart pumping fast. It's quite weird and I'm feeling more weirder now, this is so foreign to me and kind of uncomfortable.

Scar: you know I love you

Me: yes

Scar: and I was wondering when will you be ready to love me the same way?

Me: never, can you let me go?

Scar: I think I should rephrase this question. Do you perhaps have an feelings for me?

I kept quiet

Me: let me go Bongani

Scar: so you do?

I blushed

Me: No!!! I can't even imagine falling for you. Now let me go.

He untangled his arm then I went to take a shower just to clear my head maybe the little feelings I have will be washed away by this water. Hopefully

I did my hygiene process then went back to the lounge only to find him cooking rice, carrots meat.

Me: it smells nice in here

Scar: (singing) Thanks to Chef SCAR!!!

Me: you're so full of yourself

Scar: I know baby (smirking)

Me: mxm

There's normal silence then I broke it off

Me: can I ask you something?

Scar: sure

He's now stirring at the meat, okay let me tell you something about me. I can't cook

Me: how do you feel about Isiphile's marriage?

Scar: umm I don't fully support it but because it is a must then I don't have a choice. Can we stop talking about Isiphile?

Me: I was just asking. Something seemed a bit off but I'm paranoid I guess

He stares at me with an annoyed look

Me: what are we having Today?

He smiles

Scar: Meat balls, Rice, carrots and peas

Me: mmh nice

After he's done cooking I dished up for the both of us

After eating we decided to watch another movie. It's just that we were bored but this time around I was awake throughout I think Transporter is more interesting than Fast and Furious even thou it didn't end the way I wanted it to.

Leaning on his shoulder or chest has now become quite normal, it's not that wow. It's actually comfortable and feels right so I move closer on his chest hearing his heart beat once again

Scar: I was hoping that the guy will end up with the girl.

Me: too bad things don't turn out the way you wish.

Scar: so you're attacking me?

Me: no I'm just saying don't get offended bro

Scar: Xena where did you get balls to answer anyway?

Me: I don't know, I've always been like this, I guess

Scar: that better stop coz it ain't cute and I'm hurt by what you just said. In fact get off my chest

Wow. Scar gets hurt? He's always tough and strong but this feature of him is something I never seen. About the chest (rubbing my hair) I'm not getting off anytime soon.

Me: sometimes I don't really think that my words hurt people, especially you. You're always feared and honoured

Scar: but not by you. Ever since I met you I always felt like I'm in a competition. You make me crazy (slightly chuckling) and alive.

Me: me? how so?

Scar: You always challenge me to be stronger and broader and mean! Which is something new to me, no ever crossed that line but you did. You always find a way to make me laugh and smile which is something I rarely do. I feel like we can be good together. I'm never been this sure about loving someone Xena. I know that it may seem as if I'm lying or what but you are doing wonders in me. You smile, your laughter and what I like most about you is that you don't try to be someone you're not. You're Xena Kabelo Mlanjana full stop. And I love everything inch of this (pointing my nose, I giggle) annoying, cocky, hot headed, cool girl on my chest.

I looked at his eyes, he's crying and it breaks my heart. He looks so vulnerable and seems sad

Me: (whispering) don't cry

I wiped his tears

More tears fell

Scar: I love you Xena

I wiped more of his tears then sat up straight on his thighs with my legs around his waist, wiping his tears as I also cry.

Me: it's gonna be okay

I hugged him tight brushing his back.

Me: this too will pass

I pulled back slowly brushing my cheek against his then our lips met, I brushed my lips on his then we kiss. I could feel something poking me

42

I pulled off then get off him.

Scar: don't fight this Xena.

Me: I'm not sure if this is what I want.

Scar: but you kissed me.

Me: I was trying to make you stop crying.

He chuckled

Me: what's so funny?

Scar: Xena I know that you have feelings for me stop playing and just be honest with yourself.

Me: um would you like some pizza? I would love some, I'm hungry

Silence

Me: okay suit yourself then.

I ordered a large box of mushroom pizza then went to his room to take his blankets

Me: here

Scar: so you'll ignore this?

Me: please answer my phone when the pizza guy comes. Thank you in advance

I went to take my evening shower, thought things through, how this may affect Isiphile, I still love her and being in another relationship while in love with someone else isn't really wise. On the other side I do have feelings for Scar but I can't bring myself to show and express them. My biggest anxiety is moving from dating girls to guys all of a sudden. I was so sure that I'm into girls I didn't think that this would happen but life happens. This is the situation I am facing and I kinda feel like I should explore this and see where it takes me, at the same time I'm not really sure I still have to make my mind up and it might take time. I'll just ignore Scar the way I used to.

After the shower I wore my PJs. Then I got back to the kitchen, the pizza is half eaten by none other than Scar.

Me: you better be joking

Scar: what?

Me: is that my pizza?

Scar: yes, what's the problem?

Me: dude.

I ran to him then pulled his ear.

Me: why (pulling ear) are you eating my food?

Scar: ouch!!!

Me: put it down.

He puts it then

Me: I want my pizza

He pushes it to me.

Me: the full one.

Scar: I'm sorry KB I'll order another one

Me: I want this one

Scar: fine I'll order the mushroom one then jeez woman

Me: I want exactly this one.

Scar: that's not possible moss

Me: why did you eat it? I want it.

Scar: mxm

I burst out laughing

Me: I'm joking with you.

Scar: you're so childish

I sat down then start eating

Me: I'm still a teen and there nothing wrong with being childish

I can't believe that I'm pretending as if nothing happened.

Scar: I never said there something wrong with it. One thing I can tell you is that it can get annoying

Taking a bite from my pizza

Me: I don't care

Scar: argh Xena

Me: what? (Talking with food on my mouth on purpose)

Scar: sies

I started talking more opening my mouth talking about random things that don't even matter just to annoy him

Scar: arghh sies man you need to grow up

He took one slice then went to his room

Me: and you need a Xena in your life!!!

Isiphile

"I'm sorry babe." And that was Sizwe apologizing again for slapping me. He is making this a norm and it's scary for me because I've never been in this situation. I do hear about it, but

I do feel like it's because I made him mad. I forgot to put salt in the pap and that was my fault.

Me: no I'm sorry.

My Grandmother used to say I should go as soon as my husband uses violence in me but a slap isn't violence right? It's just a slap. On my wedding day I was told to endure marriage and that's what I'll do. If I'm being a bad wife then I should be punished right?

I tried wiping tears falling on my face

Advertisement

he seems apologetic then he hugs me.

Sizwe: sorry babe.

I burry myself on his arms as he brushes me till I'm silent.

Sizwe: listen, wear something nice and I'll take you out.

Me:(smiling) really?

He also smiles revealing a dimple

Sizwe: yes

I walked happily to my closet then took a blue dress with black heels.

Sizwe can be a gentleman when he wants. He has a way of putting a smile on my face.

We went to this expensive restaurant,

Sizwe: you look beautiful

I kinda blushed, I am definitely not falling for him. I pray that doesn't happen

Sizwe: umm I have something to tell you.

Me: yes?

Sizwe: I will be taking Ayanda as a second wife.

Me: what? Why?

Sizwe: I love her, simple as that and ahh she agreed on being a second wife because she loves me and I love her.

Me: oh

He was so serious

Sizwe: yes.

Me: it's not like we love each other or anything close to that so it's fine.

I feel like crying, my life is about to be torture. I hate Ayanda, she hates me. Can I wake up from this nightmare

Sizwe: did your grandmother give you a necklace or something close to it by any chance? Or your mother

At this point I'm not myself so I got up and ordered an Uber.
Shit is real!!

Scar

So Xena is playing hard to get huh. Doesn't she see that I love her. I'm not here trying to play with her heart I mean she's been broken enough from losing a girl called Alex and that whole saga. I'm not trying to play her, I have serious intentions about her. Y'all like ... maybe tomorrow she'll be done with the thinking or something. One thing I'm sure about is that I'm not giving up on her

Today I slept in room coz this girl can be annoying asf! Yho she can be annoying. Xena is a whole entire mood. A MOOD I'm telling you.

Following day I woke up pretty early just to get revenge.

I tip toed to the fridge. Noticed she's still sleeping. Good. I think I should put this on camera. I'm coming back I set the camera by the vase close to were she's sleeping...great everything is clear. Then I took ice blocks and cold water from

the fridge. Crushed the ice blocks then mixed them with the water. Wish me luck

I tip toed to her stared at the camera then I poured the water on her.

Z A M A

SFMX

Our biggest enemy currently, there's this girl/boy called Xena that recently entered their gang. She's pretty good, I heard and she's the long lost daughter of one of the biggest drug lords in S.A. they don't know where she is but since I have Athini (PI) I can get any info I want. For example I got that info in a necklace hidden in the forest. See you know what SFMX did is unforgivable and they have to pay the price. And that will be Xena's life.

So basically we're killing two birds with one stone

2016 definitely is our year!

43

XENA

Something cold fell on my body, I freaked out screaming my lungs out

Me: What was that!!!!

Only to find Scar chuckling pouring water on me

Scar: payback ain't sweet neh.

I got up and chased him while he is laughing running away from me and my heart starts throbbing

Me: you're gonna pay for this Bongani

I looked the door then kept the key in my pocket just to make sure he doesn't get out. I took a pillow

Now he's busy recording me I chased him and he is running further and further. Somehow I find this amusing. I finally bit him with the pillow.

Scar: I'm sorry.... (Talking to the camera) This has gone wrong (then he switched the phone off)

The room is filled with laughter and screams, he takes the pillow from me then bits me with it. I scream in laughter as he chased me.

Me: I surrender

I throw myself on the couch catching my breath.

Me: you play too much.

I see he's also tired he then throws himself on my arm!!

Me: I'm not a couch, move!!

Scar: I'm so tired (snoring)

Me: dude! (Pushing him) you're heavy

He pretends to be asleep,

Me: (fake crying) yiiiiiiiiiiii yiiiiii

I hear a soft chuckle coming from him then he sat straight up then looked at me for a while

Scar: you're so weird Xena and I love it

That was unexpected, I don't why coz this phrase ain't cute or what but it's so special. He loves my weirdness. I love his too.

Scar: staring is rude lady.

I didn't notice I was thinking while looking at him.

Me: I'm sorry.

Scar: what are you thinking about?

Me: you.

Shit! I didn't say that. Did I say that? Oh no my life is over.

He licks his lips moving closer to me.

Scar: about me?

Me: nothing special. Okay let me be truthful to myself and you.

I sat up straight

Me: Honestly Scar, I've been doing some thinking and I've been thinking that.... (pause) please bear with me ...this is quite hard to get off my chest.

He held my hand in a comforting way, I looked at him then smiled.

Me: ummm I've been thinking that it's not fair to you that.... This is hard.... (Sighs)

Scar: take your time

Me: ummmScar...

Scar: Xena (slightly smiling)

Me: I think it's time we eat breakfast because it's not healthy to go on like this. We can't miss breakfast because breakfast is the most important meal of the day. You feel me? Should I make the breakfast or you do?

—

After my question he looked at me shocked.

Me: what? Do you need some water? Are you okay?

Scar: I'm not allowing this to happen.

Me: listen right now I'm really hungry. I need to eat breakfast.
We'll talk later. Toddles

I went to the kitchen area and made myself food coz your girl is hungry hungry.

I made sandwich

Me: hey Scar should I make you some?

Scar: No I'm good

Me: are you sure?

Scar: I'm not sure

Me: I have something to tell you.

Scar: what? (Frustrated)

Me: dude chill out! Okay are you ready?

Scar: yes (annoyed)

Me: it may sound weird but I think I do have feelings for you.

Scar: finally!!!

I smile at him

Me: and I would really want to try this out but we have to kinda take it very slow.

Scar: I fully understand, I get it babe

He came by my side then hugged me. Arghh these arms are strong and quite weird but anyways I bury myself on his chest. This is really weird. Yep it's weird but we'll get there

I pulled out

Me: we have to set some rules first.

Scar: thank you Xena

He kissed my cheek multiple times then he spun me around. I close my eyes and enjoyed being spun in the air screaming slightly because I'm afraid of heights.

Scar: I got the girl!!!! Whuuuu!!!! I LOVE YOU Xena!!!

I chuckled at that coz he sounds like soccer speakers, you see those people who be like 'he kicks the ball to the net and GOAL!!!! Teko modise ' I'm so weird oh my God!!

Finally he put me on the floor.

Scar: I love you

I smiled at him

Me: so the rules.

Scar: I'm more than ready.

Me: um basically there should be loyalty, commitment

Advertisement

communication With an exclamation mark and trust. So what is something you'd like to say?

Scar: what you said.

Me: okay so babe

Scar: I am forgetting something

Me: yeah

Scar: never be alone with your ex.

Me: you mean Isiphile?

Scar: yes, will you do that for me?

Me: (hesitate)...yes

Scar: good. And now

He puts his arms around my waist

Scar: can I get a kiss?

Me: yeah I guess

It's just a kiss I mean ... It's a kiss. He leaned in then our lips touch. He brushed my back pulling me closer to him. I could

feel that he's been hungry, the kiss is full of passion and a strong emotion of wanting. He deepens the kiss I let out a moan then he pinned me on the wall then pulled out. Again he smashes his lips on my neck, I feel electrified and excited. He kisses my neck again, I let out a moan as he sucks my skin as he groans

This feels so good.

Me: yesess

I wrap my legs on him and regret it instantly coz something poked me the instant, he starts grinding on me. Shit!!! This is good. I bit my lip to prevent me from moaning. Owe my body is feeling so Good! I think I'm wet (whispering) down there. Oh fuck! This feels good

Me: mmhh

I dip my hands on his scalp rubbing it smoothly travelling my fingers on him brushing his back pulling him closer.

Me: ohh!!!!

Scar: Fuck!!!

He moves on nunu I jumped off him pulling out. He rubs his face, eyes red. And one hell off a TENT on his pants if you know what I mean.

Scar: what? (In a drowsy sexy voice)

Me: I think that's enough for today

There is awkward silence after that

VATHISWA

I was having my morning cup of coffee when Aaron's mother (Grace) pulled off in the driveway.

A minute later the door bell rang.

Me: come in

I went to the door

Me: molo Nontombi!! (We hugged)

Grace: hey sisi

Me: how are you? It's been a long time since I last saw you.
Please take a seat

Grace: I won't lie I am not doing well.

She takes a seat, I do the same.

Grace: I came with bad news.

Me: what is it now?

Grace: apperantly my son raped your daughter.

Me: no that's not true

Grace: he told me when I went to visit him in jail.

Me: no way!

Grace: what dissappoints me is that Aaron has not done this on one person but over 10 other women.

Me: what?!!!

Grace: now he is undergoing brain examinations to check his mind.

Me: wow wow I can't believe this. Xena told me this but I didn't believe her.

Grace: I also didn't believe you when you told me because I didn't give birth to a rapist. Now I have to suck the hard truth that I am a mother of a rapist. It's sad Vathiswa and I am sorry for what my son did to your daughter. Forgive him please, if you can contact her, please tell her I am sorry on behalf of Aaron.

After she left, I had to book a plane ticket to Johannesburg. I need to apologize to her for my actions. I'm such a bad mother.

44

We're now eating lunch, talking about Random stuff.

Scar: so tomorrow is my birthday

Me: 1 May got it babe. It's also Isiphile's birthday.

He stares at me for sometime.

Me: what?

Scar: you mentioned her name.

Me: sorry

Ok so I'm not even allowed to mention her name.

Scar: good.

There's silence after that. I finish up my food then opened water for washing dishes.

Scar: babe

Me: yes

Scar: there is something I have to tell you.

Suddenly I got quite nervous

Me: yeah?

Scar: my grandmother is coming this side for our 21 birthday. I think she should be by the airport by now.

Me: oh okay it would be lovely to finally see her.

Scar: she's amazing. I love that woman so much

Me: I wish I could say I relate

Scar: that's sad. I mean how can your own mother not believe that you were raped I mean that's cruel asf!

Me: who told you I was raped?

Silence

Me: Bongani?

Scar: I'm sorry.

Me: who told you?

Scar: i have my ways baby (he smirks)

I know some people may be like aww that's so cute. Well for me that's Bull Double The Shit!

In my mind I'm like there's no way he knows this because I never told him. The only person who knows my stuff is Isiphile.

Me: let me guess you went through my therapist stuff?

Silence

Me: answer me dammit!!! (Breaking a plate, he stared at me frightened)

Scar: I am sorry I didn't think that

Me: you didn't think? When you went through my personal stuff....you weren't thinking? ...you're trying to telling me you didn't have intentions? You know that's called invasion of privacy. What if I never wanted you to know my past. I wasn't ready but you decided that "no this is fine, she will never know"
Bongani I am angry at you

Scar: I am so sorry Kabelo it's just that I couldn't bring myself to speak to you at that moment. I know that I'm wrong and (door knock)

Me: I'll get it.

I went open. A old man with torn clothes appears.

Man: hello madam.

Me: hi

He looked at a piece of paper on his hands

Man: does Bongani Peter stay here?

Me: yes, please come in (I swayed then he got in)

Man: nice apartment

Me: thanks

We went to the kitchen area where Scar was eating

Me: he's here for you.

Scar: oh um are a tenant here?

Man: No. I am Lindelani Peter.

Scar: oh so?

Man: can we speak in private?

Scar: you can speak in front of her.

Man: okay well I am your father.

Scar: I don't have a father

Man: I am your father

Scar: prove it.

Man: how? You want a DNA?

Scar: no I'll ask you one question. How many birthmarks does my mom have?

Man: one, it's a big black mark on her back.

Scar Smirks

Scar: where have you been all my life? Why show up now?

Man: I was arrested after you turned 3 and it's only now my sentence was over.

Scar: oh so you didn't check up on us for 17 year?

Man: your mother wanted nothing to do with me. Talking about your mother where is she?

Scar: she died when we were nine. She was murdered.

Man: that's sad. I was looking forward to see her.

Scar: bad timing taima

Me: I think I should give you guys time to catch up and talk through.

Scar: ok love (he genuinely smiled and fake smiled)

I'm still angry at him.

I got in the bedroom and took a nap. I needed it

I woke up after four hours. Yerr I feel so numb. It's like I ate a living fish. I hate taking naps during the day, I always feel this. I get moody and feel like not talking to anyone.

I checked my phone and there is missed call from my mom.
Why did she call?

I called her back

Mom: hi Xena at last. I've been waiting here at the airport but I got a lift from someone. Don't worry yourself. I'll see you in a few minutes

Me: oh where are you?

Mom: I'm here in Jo'burg.

Me: for what?

Mom: listen baby we'll talk later I am by the apartment building now.

Tu tu Tu

Okay? I wonder why she's here. I went to the bathroom to wash my face then went to the kitchen to look for food. I wonder where Scar is? And his father. Maybe they went out.

I took pizza left overs then ate that.

After I ate I felt hungry. So ordered another pizza

ISIPHILE

I think it's about time I go take the necklace since it's my birthday tomorrow and it's time I open it. After work I went to forest, basically I kept it there coz it's the safest place I could think off, it's quiet and far away from other people. I got in a dilapidated hut, dug up at the exact spot where I put it. I feel like someone has been here. I dug deeper ... Where is it?

After an sometime looking around I gave up. Who could have taken them? I am screwed, how will I explain this to Grans and Scar?

SCAR

While Xena went to the bedroom, the conversation with my dad continued

Me: so did you have any kids?

Lindelani:yes, I had a baby boy named Aaron.

Me: Aaron?

This better not be serious. This can't be the same Aaron who... The same Aaron that I sent people to beat up. Well I just wanted to make him pay for what he did to Xena so while he was in prison, I sent a few of my boys to do some work on him but I didn't think that Let me ask him more.

Me: his surname is Peter?

Lindelani: yes that's obvious. Thing is

Advertisement

after your mother was brutally killed I moved on with my life and found a woman called Grace. We got married then a year later that's when I was arrested. But now I heard that she is this rich lady working as a CEO an-

Me: basically you abandoned us.

Lindelani: your mother wanted nothing to do with me.

Me: why were you arrested, mind if I ask?

My phone rang, Gogo is displayed on the screen.

Me: I have to take this.

—

I had to leave to pick my grandmother up. Lindelani wanted to tag along, I bought him food since he said he was hungry. He showed me pictures of me and Isi when we were babies and mom although I had a vague picture of her. He seems as a pretty chilled guy, the way he talks it's like he doesn't care about life anymore. I still didn't get the answer to why he was arrested, I guess it's too personal and I am done with pushing or pursuing people's business.

I got in the airport, at last saw gran. She waved at me then I went to her, hugged her tight

Me: I missed you.

Gran: missed you too. Take these sacks

She had her clothes in a "no problem" bag. I don't get it coz she has suit cases back at home. I guess these types of bags will forever be her thing

An old woman who seemed lost came to us.

She greeted my gran and I was giving her a plan stare.

She talked to gran in a low voice then nodded.

Me: what are you whispering about?

Gran: oh she wants a lift. She's been waiting for her daughter to pick her up but she wasn't answering her calls.

Me: this lady maybe a corn artist.

Gran: I know her, she's a priest we usually go to in Durban.

I gave her a doubting stare, she looked at me frightened.

Me: fine, where are you going?

Woman: I..am... g.oing (I tilted my head giving her a plan stare, why is she stattering?) To Xena Mlanjana's apartment. She lives in this location, she just sent it now through WhatsApp.

I looked at her for sometime

I don't know why she said it like that but I definitely know that there's only one Xena Mlanjana in this city.

Gran: before I forget. I organized a birthday party for you guys. Since it's your 21 birthday and I just wanted to do this suprise party for you. Specifically for my one and only twins

Lindelani: I'm so drowsy (yawning) son, can you get me a beer? It's been years !!!

—

P.s whenever it's our birthday something bad always happens. I don't know why?

45

After sometime I hear the door opening and there walks my mom, Scar, his father and an old looking woman who looked quite familiar.

Scar: and welcome home.

Mom: nice apartment, where is my daughter?

Me: here (raising my hand slightly)

She rushed to hug me. I didn't really hug back, just a pat then pulled off.

Old woman: and Bongani who is this again? (Pointing at me)

Scar: this is ...my girlfriend, Xena.

Mom: girlfriend?

Me: yes mom.

Mom: Xena my child we need to talk.

It clicked. I know this old woman from the wedding. I think she is Scar's granny that he was talking about but she didn't stay for too long.

Grand: hey girly I think I know you.

Me: I actually recognise you too.

Gran: you were the one who came late for the wedding.

Shit! That's a bad first impression.

Me:(shy) yeah hey.

Scar: seems like you guys know each other already.

Mom: obviously because her granddaughter is married to my son.

Scar: but ...

Okay I guess Scar didn't really notice mom that day coz I mean there were many people there and he doesn't really do people. But I don't get it. Mom is quite well known, she prays for people. Stuff like that, I don't really go to the trips she goes to but man her and dad go around doing that. But nah I get it now, it's not like mom was gonna be known by many people or what. She's not that famous.

Gran: Bongani aren't you going to formally introduce me to your girlfriend?

Scar: yeah yeah, Xena meet my Grandmother.

Me: nice to officially meet you.

Gran: same here kid

Mom: Xena mntanam I am hungry.

Argh this room is crowded asf!

And there's only one bedroom available and we are 5.

Scar: Xena can I talk to you for a sec.

He pulled my arm to the bedroom. I don't even have time to be angry at him about him finding out my things the way he did.

Once the door is closed I sat on the bed waiting for him to speak

Scar: first off I am really sorry for what I have done. What we were arguing about earlier. I am deeply sorry about that my love

Me: it's chilled Scar, it's not like it matters now. There's no time to be mad, your family is here, and my mom is here and we need to figure out how we gonna sleep.

Scar: I think we should sleep in a guest house.

Me: that's a great thought.

Scar: Xena

Me: Bongani

Scar: thank you for accepting my apology.

Me: it's cool but just don't do something creepy as that again.
Oh skrrrrr

Scar: so we're cool?

Me: yep. We are cool, and now we have to be the best power couple this planet has ever seen

I hang my arms on his shoulder.

Scar: yeah?

Then touched his lips with mine. He places his hands on my waist the we kiss for sometime. I pulled out then we looked into each others eyes. I can't really look at him for too long.

Scar: don't shift your eyes, look at me.

Me: I'm shy

He smiled then kissed my forehead.

Scar: don't be

Silence

Scar: Xena?

Me: huh?

Scar: I love you.

I get so speechless every time he says these words so I just hugged him tight brushing the back of his head.

Scar: aren't you gonna say you love me back?

Me: we were taking things slow Scar.

Scar: but saying you love me back isn't of a big deal?

Me: please understand the difference between having feelings for someone and being in love. They are not the same and I can't lie in front of your face.

He groaned in frustration.

Me: babe please be patient with me okay? Please

Scar: fine Xena.

Me: thanks

I pecked his cheek

Me: I think we should notice the fam about sleeping in the guest house so we can get things ready soon.

Scar: okay Xena (annoyed)

I don't get why he's so upset about this. Scar willingly agreed to take things slow and now he's all grumpy. He approached me and he doesn't want to sweat for it. It's not like I am punishing him it's just that I am not fully ready or comfortable yet and the last thing I will do is lie on his face saying I am in love with him. I mean how can you love someone you started dating a few days ago. Please balance me on this one I'm not sure if this happens

on other people. So a guy pursues you right then he tells you that he loves you and you say you love them back? In a few days? First off I think we should understand the concept "love". It takes a lot of time to fully say you love someone. For instance I know that I love Isiphile coz I had this huge crush on her for more than a month and probably she was feeling the same. I'm not sure if I'm making sense and I still love her even today. I am 100% sure that I love that girl. I don't care about people who think we aren't perfect for each other or what but one thing I know is I love Isiphile with my whole heart. It's just that circumstances put us in a position where we couldn't be with each other and on the other side I kinda developed some feelings for Scar so I was like let me give this a try. And I am willing to work this through with Scar only if he becomes patient.

At last we went to this guest house using Scar's J wagon. I don't have a car, I don't think I need one because the boys always have me covered.

Everyone got their respective rooms

Scar: but you and me are sharing a room.

"Xena!!" And that's mom calling me.

Me: I'll be back in few.

I went to my mom's room.

Me: yeah?

Mom: I need to tell you why I came here.

Me: about time I thought you weren't gonna tell me.

I took a seat

Mom: first of all, I am sorry for all the pain I have caused you.

Me: what made you realise that ?

Mom: Grace, Aaron's mother told me about what Aaron did to you and my child I am deeply sorry for not believing you.

Me: about time.

Mom: Xena the reason I didn't believe you at first is because I didn't think that Aaron, your best friend would do that to you. Please understand that he grew up in front of my eyes, he was always sweet, he was such a good boy and that blinded me from believing that he was capable doing such. I didn't think that something like this can happen to you, I always thought that Rape has its people and I was indential that it happened to my one and only baby girl. I am so sorry for not believing you
Xena

Me: but mom, I am your child. You have birth to me. Why choose to believe someone else other than me?

Mom: like I said I was blinded. I know there is no excuse for this, I don't deserve your forgiveness but please take this into consideration. Think about it

Advertisement

this is hard for me too you know. Swallowing the hard truth and humbling myself in front of you. I know that I should have been an example but I wasn't. I should have supported you but I was there. Oh my child. Please forgive me

Me: you know what? Life is too short to hold grudges. Although you put me through hell, I screamed in your face, I cried, I went through counseling, I had anger issues, I lost myself, I knew and know that I won't be the same Xena . I forgive you.

Mom: ohhhhh thank you Kabelo oh my child, come here for a hug

Me: we're not friends mom.

Mom: okay but I'm happy that you forgave me.

Me: as time went by I just had to let all the anger and hate so that I could live a peaceful life. If it wasn't for my therapist, I don't know where I would be. Maybe I would be in jail or maybe died.

Tears rolled on my mother's face.

Me: yes mother. I would be dead by now and when I look back. I thank you for putting me in Medicine because I got to meet my therapist who is also my ex girlfriend which I still love

Mom: but you have a boyfriend.

Me: I know. I know mother. I also know that you don't like the fact that I'm different from other people. The fact that I belong to the LGBTQ community

Silence

—

Mom: since when are you into boys?

I chuckled slightly

Me: life happens that's all I can say.

Silence

My mind is empty, a breeze of cool air seems to pass my mind. I feel kinda free and at peace that I am having this conversation with my mother. I am happy that she finally accepted the fact that I am one victims of rape. I'm not proud of that title but I own it. What I am proud of that I am a survivor !

SCAR

After Xena left I went to the lounge where Gran and dad were at. I noticed they are in a deep conversation.

Me: I'm sorry to interrupt but I would like to know which flavours of pizza would you like?

Gran: Makoti should be cooking.

Me: I think maybe we should wait for dinner time

Gran: hey Makati should cook.

Eish Xena can't cook and I cant expose her like this plus there is no kitchen here, it's either we eat in their dining/ kitchen where they prepare food for us or we buy food for ourselves.

Me: let's wait for dinner time. It's almost 19:00

When I was about to leave

Gran: hey wethu, why didn't you tell me you found your father.

Me: Gogo mara, I met him today also.

Gran: ohh

Me: he told you where he comes from moss?

Gran: yes, we were still talking. You know I am glad that finally you met him. Now you will have a father figure.

Father figure neh? We will see about that.

Gran: come here

Me: I'm here moss

Gran: come closer

I went closer then she whispers on my ear.

Gran: did Isiphile take the necklace?

Me: I don't know

Gran: didn't you speak to her.

I chose to be quiet. I guess she knows why I'm quiet. She knows the tension between me and her.

Gran: mnk! I wonder... You can go

XENA

Me and mom were now talking about random stuff, which rarely happens. I guess when you're older it's easier to talk to your mother

Mom: and also that time you went to a party thinking we didn't see you.

Me: when?

Mom: you remember when we had cancelled our trip and you were suspended. I saw you

Shit! How can she see me then not talk.

Mom: I am old Xena I know these things. I was once a teenager too.

I pouted feeling guilty.

Mom: you're one trouble child you know (slightly laughing) but when you're gone. I even miss reprimanding you for the smallest things. It's lonely back at home. It's always quite

Me: but you hated it when I put the volume on top

Mom: yes because you were making noise but now I miss that.

I feel sorry for her.

Me: but you were the one who threw me out.

Mom: yes and I am sorry for that too. Thing is Xena you crashed the wall, you went out at night plus you're a girl. You drank and you took my card,(How did she know about the card) yes I know you took it don't look at me like that, I know you kalok last time it was taken by you and you are the only one who knows where it stays and is capable of taking it. Your father wouldn't take it I know so

Me: yho mama shame I am sorry for that. I know I've been a bad kid but sometimes it's just that I don't really think.

Mom: I'm no longer angry for that. It's part of growing and now I think it's time for you to be matured. You're in varsity and that maturity mindset is needed. Talking about maturity I should I shouldI forgot what I wanted to say. Ohhh I should pay for your fees.

Me: don't worry yourself I already paid for my fees.

Mom: how did you do that.

Me: I am a big girl, I can take care of myself

Mom: heeee ohkay so was it your boyfriend?

Me: No.

Mom: can you tell me more about your boyfriend.

Me: I think you already know him. He is Isiphile's brother.

Mom: ohhh what changed your mind about girls

Me: mom. I am bisexual which means I like both girls and boys.

Mom: ohh so if you're with a girl and you want you babies how will you have them?

I can't believe mom is so open about this conversation. What changed?

Me: adoption, sperm donor and foster. I'm most likely to go for adoption.

Mom clears her throat

Me: what?

Mom: nothing.... Okay ke Kabelo I hear you.

Me: why did you ask this?

Mom: I wanted to know my child better. I came to a decision were I thought that I should accept you the way you are. Let you live your life the way you want.

Me: Thank you I guess.

Honestly I am happy that finally my mom accepted me for who I am. It really means the world to me and I love my mother, she is a human being too and thus is bound to make mistakes. It's said that God forgives one regardless of what they have done, okay don't get me wrong but if God can forgive why can't I ? I'm not sure if I'm making sense

—

At last we ate, getting to know each other more than I went to sleep.

P.s. I slept on the couch and Scar on the bed.

When it I was 00:00 my alarm rang then I went to the bathroom to call Isiphile using Skype. I hope she's still up. Lucky for me, she was up!! And answers

Isi: hello.

Me: (singing)Happy birthday to you happy birthday to you happy birthday dear Isi. Happy birthday to you.

45 Continuation

Isi: Thank you Xena

Me: you're welcome

Isi: bye.

Me: I just called you now and you want to hang up.

Isi: what do you want Xena?

Me: talk

Isi: about what?

Me: it's your birthday aren't you excited?

Isi: No... can I hang up now?

Me: are you avoiding me?

Isi: Xena I am doing my work and you're disturbing me or is there anything else you wanna say.

Me: I love you.

Line went silent

Me: hello...are you still there?

Isi: good bye Xena.

Wow did she just hang up on me. This cuts so deep but honestly what was I expecting. I think I should forget her. I need

to forget she ever existed in my life. I'm not sure if I will be able to

I went back to our bedroom and woke Scar. After sometime he slowly opens his eyes

Me: happy birthday baby.

He sightly smiled sleepy.

Scar: thanks babe, come here

I went by his side as he sat up straight.

Scar: sit here (pointing his lap)

Okay, I sat on his lap then he wraps his arm around me.

Scar: now sing for me properly.

Me: okay(my lips curl to a smile) Happy birthday to you, happy birthday to you. Happy birthday dear Bongani Happy birthday to you.

And now his smile is more broader than before.

Scar: you have an amazing voice. You know that?

Me: kinda

Scar: you should sing for me more often.

Me: I will only if you remind me.

He looks at me smiling

Me: what?

Scar: I'm staring at what's mine (kissing my shoulder) I love you Kabelo Mlanjana. You don't have to say it back though.

He slightly smiles at me. I genuinely smile back thinking of how lucky I am to have him. Scar is the best boyfriend a girl can ask for. He doesn't force me into something I'm not comfortable to. He deserves all the love the world can offer and I think it's time I give him that type of love he deserves.

Y'all Scar is... A life saver. When I had no where to go, when mom chased me out, he took me in his apartment plus bought me a plane ticket. He gave me money to make sure I land safely. Thinking about this makes me so grateful coz I don't think that I've met someone as persistent as he is. This man is the best

Scar: what are you thinking about?

Me: me? Nothing deep. I'm just drowsy

Scar: we can change arrangements, I sleep in the couch and you sleep on the bed.

Me: how about we share the bed?

His eyes sparkled.

Scar: are you sure?

Me:yes

Scar: mmkay

I got in the bed, he stared at me unbelievably

Me: what? Get in bed too.

Scar: okay (smiling)

He is doing a lot of smiling lately, Scar wasn't like this when I met him. I feel like he is changing.

Scar: Do you know how you make me feel?

Me: excited?

Scar: (shaking his head sideways) you make me Alive. When I am with you I feel like my life makes sense.

Me: you sound like you had a tough life.

He got in bed too

Scar: I wouldn't say that besides the fact that my family was poor.

Me: but what made you the quiet Scar I saw on my first day of classes?

Scar: nature, I guess. I don't really know I think it's just that I never let anyone deep in my life because I don't feel safe. Over the years I built this wall that people couldn't break and guess who broke it? It doesn't really matter thou. What matters is that I am with you.

He wraps his arm around my waist. We slept in that position till morning came.

I woke up first watched him while he's asleep. He's so cute and peaceful

I got up, went to the bathroom to take a quick shower after that I did a little breakfast. An egg and bacon then tea from the kitchen (guest house kitchen). Went back to our bedroom found him on his phone texting

Me: morning babe

Scar: oh hey you.

Me: how did you sleep?

Scar: very good since I slept by your side.

I got a bit nervous and excited after he said that.

Scar: how did you sleep?

Me: good, and look what I have for you.

Scar: aww babe. You cooked for me. That's so cute

Me: coz it's your birthday.

He genuinely smiled then ushered me to come with his food.

I gave him then he took a bite then licked his fingers

Scar: it's good, what did you put in these eggs?

Me: aromat nothing heavy

Scar: it's really good, you can make a great a good cook.

Me: thanks Babe, I'm glad you like it. You have no idea what present I have for your birthday.

His eyes sparkled

Scar: what is it?

Me: you have wait. You'll see tonight (winking)

Scar: mmmh can't wait. Damn girl you're making me curious.

Isiphile

It's 18:00

The party is taking place at my house. Not the one I own with my husband but the house I had before I got married to him. I turned it to a lodge where people can spend a night and I'm

making money out of that. My marriage and Sizwe is out of community which means what's his is his and what's mine is mine. So all the profits and my money will not be divided amongst us.

Ayanda now lives with us and sleeps in Sizwe's room. I on the other side sleeps in a guest room. Everyday I always hear groans and moans from their room. So most of the time I work in my office which is far from them.

Work

That's all that makes my life easier and making sense. I try to do things the right way so that I don't get a slap or beating from Sizwe. So everyday I iron his shirt and pants for the day. I clean the house cook basically everything that should be done by a wife.

He says that sometimes we should have sex coz he wants a heir (son). It's not like I want to have sex with him but because it's the agreement that I should have a child within a year I have no other choice but to force myself in having sex with him but we haven't done the deed!!!

Umm so Ayanda is the trophy wife. I do everything she does nothing. It's okay though. I'm used to working like this. Growing up from a poor family kinda prepares one from tough things

and to be humble. I am very grateful that my gran raised me well.

Talking about gran

She called me a week ago and was like "we should do a surprise birthday for you" I know what you're thinking. How is it a surprise if she's going to say we should do it. And I'm the birthday girl. But anyways we prepared everything, the list of people who should attend. I want nothing wrong happening. I made sure that I hired securities to make sure that only people in the list come.

Of course Xena will come too as well as Scar.

(Sighs)

Talking about Xena. She called me this morning, how cute of her and it's something that made my day. Although I didn't really entertain the idea, I still love her but the problem is. I can't be with her and she knows! I know she's probably single and bored but I have a husband.

I'm currently sitting at the table at the party, people are entering, Gran and Xena's mom have arrived but we're waiting on Scar and Xena

Oh here they are at the entrance

Wait why are they walking together like that?

It's like they have something going on, maybe I am paranoid.

Mandla and Fred also come in. Well Scar hates me and I don't hate him so saying he is my enemy would a turn off I guess and now he just stood in front of me I looked at Xena next to him. She's looking good. Then Scar puts his arm on her waist then she flashes a lovey dovey smile on her. TF!

Scar: happy birthday sister.

Me: happy birthday brother.

Silence

Scar: how rude of me, meet my girlfriend Xena.

Me: girlfriend?

Scar: yes now if you'll excuse us.

Xena acted as if she doesn't know me nor recognise me.

I rolled my eyes as they went to sit on a table next to us.

The party went on, they sang for us then

Ayanda: attention please (hitting the glass with a spoon)

People looked at her

Ayanda: me and Sizwe are getting married.

A few people clapped the rest were looking at her like ... She didn't stop there.

Ayanda: I am also pregnant

Everyone was shocked including Sizwe. After that little speech she went back to her "fiance" which is my husband!

We cut the cake made wishes ate and now it was the real party time.

Gran: Isiphile where is the necklace?

Me: umm necklace? Ummm I think I forgot to take it from my hiding place. I'll take it tomorrow.

Gran: you know it's time to open it now and many people are after it. You should take it as soon as possible before it's stolen.

Me: okay Gogo I will (I smiled) excuse me for a second I am going to the bathroom.

Gran: alright ke don't get lost.

Me: I won't gogo (chuckling)

I walked the second pool at the back of the house. It's a jacuzzi

I just want to be in a relaxed space and chilled vibe. So Xena and Scar are dating huh? And I lost the necklace

Z A M A

Me: are you ready gents?

Boys: yes boss

Me: alright get in your respective cars and let's hit it.

Remember we are aiming at Xena. Are we clear?

ST: but bozza you already have the necklace why are you kidnapping her?

Me: shut the fuck up wena sarni!! Things will go the way I want and if you make any mistakes then you are dead!

Silence

Me: Good, and now let's hit the road!

X E N A

I was kinda feeling overwhelmed being here so I told Scar I needed some air. He allowed me only if I didn't go too far.

Scar: is your phone with you?

Me: yes babe stop being over protective, I'm just going by the pool.

Scar: I have to make sure you're safe.

Me: okay (kissing his cheek) I'm leaving now.

Mandla makes whistles. Mxm ha ha I know those guys set us up then decided to show up today.

I went out to the pool sat by the chairs. Minutes later someone sat next to me.

I looked at their side. She is not even looking at me. Mxm ...wait

Me: Isiphile?

She turns and damn I'm right.

Isi: hey Xena

Me: hey there

Isi: are you following me?

Me: No! You wish.

Isi: okay

Silence

I'm trying to think of something to say and it must not be something stupid such as "I love you" argh I hate myself for being a fool this morning. She didn't even seem happy that I called. Xena don't give her the attention she's looking for.

Instead I decided to sing.

Only girl by Rihanna

Me: "Want you to make me feel like I'm the only girl in the world

Like I'm the only one that you'll ever love

Like I'm the only one who knows your heart

Only girl in the world...

Like I'm the only one that's in command"

She looked at me

Isi: you can sing girl!

Me: I know

Isi: why don't you try get that voice to a studio. Make songs and be famous?

Me: I don't know, I never thought about it that way maybe I was more into creating my own studio then start off there.

Isi: but if you can first sing with other singers that are famous you can get exposure and it will be easy for you.

I gave a little thought to what she said. That can be true

maybe that's how I should try things when I finally graduate

Me: you're right. Thanks for the advice

Isi: so you'll start looking for an agent tomorrow?

Me: no after graduation.

Isi: why then? I think building your career now is better than chasing your dreams when you graduate coz it's not easy getting in the industry and it may take some time so it's better off starting now than later. It's what I think I don't know your perspective.

Me: I'll think about it

Silence

Isi: anyways how has everything been since... You know

Me: since I got a new boyfriend?

Isi: no since the last encounter we had.

Me: pretty rough if that's what you're talking about.

I sat up straight

Isi: I'm sorry if I'm intriguing anything.

I feel so open. I don't know why I'm always like this around her.

Me: um last time I couldn't bring myself to talk about it. I feel like I'm ready now

Isi: you want to talk about something so personal with me?

Me: you're still my therapist

Isi: not anymore

She sat up straight and now we're staring at each other. I feel connected somehow which is quiet weird and new, I know I love but not to this extent of feeling connected. How can I feel connected to another soul? We stare at each other for a solid 5 minutes. No words exchanged I feel like she's reading my eyes and in her eyes I see nothing. It's more like she's trying to hide something, they seem darker than usual and mysterious which makes me want to know her more. I feel like I don't know the real her.

I blinked breaking off the stare

Me: can I trust you?

Isi: of course it's my job.

Me: I can't believe I'm talking about this.

Isi: relax, it's me. Isiphile your ex therapist.

Me: (I sigh) so the last time we were intimate you know what happened right?

Isi: yes I remember everything minute of it

Me: um and I didn't feel comfortable in...you know?

Isi: yes and I guess that's what you want to talk about (slightly smiling)

Me: yes I would like to talk about that.

Isi: first I think you should try to focus.

Me: focus?

Isi: yeah don't think too much. I observed that you're an over thinker.

Me: me?

Isi: yes, you think too much even though you don't show it but I can read it. Xena allow yourself to explore, you're young you have a whole life ahead of you and I feel like you're hindering your happiness.

Me: no I'm not.

Isi: and now you're lying to yourself.

I blinked coz I also knew I was lying.

Isi: try to be yourself. The "you" become when you're giving pleasure to me (I smirk) don't smirk like that.

She slightly blushed I got a little bit turned on. Something about that smile just ...stimulated

...

Isi: I was saying that. You need to relax, you need to push away all the negative thoughts and live in the moment and let your partner pleasure you girl!

Me: can I maybe practice it on you?

Isi: umm

Me: it's not like we're really doing it we're practicing.

She chuckled

Isi: you're a nasty living human being X.

They way she said that.

Me: are you seducing me?

I came closer to her.

Isi: no

I sat next to her then moved closer

Me: show me.

I move closer on her face then leaned in. She let out a shaking breathe as I hold her waist.

I kissed her lips, mmh they are so sweet. She pulls me closer to her letting out a moan. I press on her back dipping my hands massaging her back sofly pulling her skin

Isi: mmh

It clicked. I pulled out

Me: we're outside, people might see us.

Isi: I know just a place.

She pulls my hand to a little flat then locks once we're inside.

Fuck!! I want her now.

I attacked her with a kiss grabbing her butt then she wraps her legs on my waist. I squeezed her butt, licked her neck sucked it

Isi: mmh Xena

I made traces on her chest opening up her shirt buttons then brushed her boobs, put on a little pressure she moans as I groan

Then unexpectedly get on top of me.

Kissed my neck too then undressed me, I'm breathing heavy fuck!

Isi: relax

I try breathing normal but I can't

I'm now naked

Isi: now I'm about to pleasure you and I need you to relax, I'm not really experienced in lesbian stuff but I'll do what I know.

Me: I can teach you here and there

Isi: okay

She kisses me, with just that I feel my whole body on a different level. I'm so into her. I don't think there's someone I've wanted such as her. She kissed me to my stomach then

Me: wait, first we should go about how were gonna do this.

Isi: you mean the-

Me: uha. It's simple not as hard as you think. So basically you use your hands and mouth. That's the main props. You know how I do it? it's like that.

Isi: I'm not you. You're a master in this.

Me: like ...I'm trying to think of an easy way to explain it. You play with your hands in there you need to go along with a rhythm and pace. First go slow do foreplay then use you tongue. Simple as that.

Isi: right. It doesn't seem as hard but it's frightening

Me: you'll get used to it and learn more by doing it often

She shyly smiled.

Isi: so the'll be more?

Me: only of fate bring us together, I don't know what the odds have for us.

Isi: let's hope hey

I swallowed then lay on my back while she's sitting on my thighs.

She started brushing my chest then my boobs

Isi: like this?

Me: yes

She put more pressure then rubbed them kinda rough applying pressure. I let out a breath in excitement then she trails down my chest kissing me till she reached my temple, applied a kiss. I held my body stiff, I'm nervous

Isi: relax X

I let out a breath trying to cool myself, tried recalling what she said earlier on. I free myself then let her do her thing. Phewww

She kisses my inner thighs breathing on them I let out a moan holding the sheets she moves closer blowing my nunu. Fuck!!

I shake a little then she kisses my nunu licking the outer part I grab the sheets tight for balance my heart racing body shivering.

Isi: is it good?

I nod

She continues playing on the outer part moving her tongue up and down in slow motion.

Me: mmhh

She starts eating me, my body feels on another level, inserts on finger while eating me. Moving her mouth up and down her tongue fully inserted she starts moving in circular motion my legs vibrate as her finger is moving in and out in and out

Me: yeses mmmh ifhdjf

Then rubs my butt eating me squeezing my butt moves faster in and out in and out

Me: faster ohhh

Isi: oh fuck!!

Moving faster in and out, tongue moving in circular fast. A sensational feeling runs over me. I'm griding while she's thrusting in me.

She licks me, her face on my nunu I move with her rhythm as she moves faster. This feels like heavens.

Me: oh ffgsss

Isi: speak in tongues baby

She stroke deeper hitting my g spot. I feel like crying in pleasure

Me: oh I'm coming

I released, then she continues licking me hitting more faster till I released again

After a breathtaking moment, we lay next to each other. I kissed her shoulder

She stares at me with soft eyes

"I love you" I say

"I love you too Xena"

Me: Thank you for the amazing experience, that was an eye opener, It felt so good. I never thought that I would feel like that in my life

She kissed my shoulder to my chest then a peck on my lips.

Isi: I can make you feel like that again

I stared at her lips then kissed her putting my leg between hers then brushed between her thighs. She let a loud moan then I got on top of her then we hear gunshots. Footsteps coming our side. Shit! WTF is happening?

We quickly try wearing our clothes while we are half way the door is broken then a bunch of men got in. Grabbed me I tried kicking and freeing myself Guy: it's this one?

Guy2: no it's this one. Guy: let's take them both.

46

SCAR

Xena just went out and I'm with the guys

Mandla: so what went up when were gone? (Smirking)

Fred: don't even ask, he got the cookie

I shift uncomfortably

Mandla: wait she didn't...

Fred looked at me in disbelief.

Mandla: she didn't give you?!!

Fred: yho Scar mfethu you're so slow

They both chuckled

Mandla: you had 1,2,3,4 days all ALONE! And you got none!!!

Fred: you're weak neh

Scar: who is weak?

Mandla: are you serious?

Scar: you won't understand why I didn't either way it's not like I'm with Xena because I want to sleep with her.

Fred bursts out laughing Mandla also laughs. I feel so small and like I'm not man enough. I mean I am a man and I have needs.

There's no other choice other than to wait for Xena till she's ready. I can't just force her, I love her enough to wait for her even though it's hard.

Mandla: he will never get laid

Me: I will, who told you that?

Fred: let's make a bet.

Me: I'm not in

Fred: he's being a chicken

They burst out laughing

Mandla: it's final, Scar Peter will never get laid.

Me: what's the payment?

Mandla: 10K

Fred: 5K from me.

Scar: you guys are even willing to pay?

Fred: bring a photo as proof.

Scar: I'm out. I can't do that to Xena.

Fred: I told you.

Mandla: he made peace with the fact that he'll never get laid.

They chuckled, I try to hold my anger and frustration then we hear gunshots

Everyone screamed, what is happening?

I try get reach of my gran then put her in a bedroom, told her to lay low there till this is all sorted out.

I got out to look for Xena shit! They are putting them in a car I aim at the guy that has them. Shot. He fell as I run towards then shotting they already have them. Their car drove away

Fuck!!

Wait why did they take them both? Why were ... I noticed a half open flat while I walked there I called Mandla and Fred to go look for them while I check this flat out.

I push the door what the fuck was happening here? Why is Xena's blazer on the floor and a panty?

This can not be what I'm thinking! Please tell me this is not what...

I have to find her, I rush to my car, tracked Fred and Mandla's location since they have the lead.

XENA

I woke up with my head throbbing, what happened?

I flicked my eyes open

"Bozz,She's awake"

I looked around, I'm tied up in a chair. A cloth on my mouth.

Me: mmmh

Where is Isiphile? I want to shout out loud but I can't. The boss walks in laughing

Boss: it's her.

He laughs again

Guy: what should I do to the other one?

Boss: keep her, she's a cop more like and needs to be taught a lesson too.

—

So this dude doesn't even know a difference between a special agent and cop.

Boss: did you search her?

Guy: yes

took her phone looked for bugs there's nothing.

Boss: great now torture her. Make a small video, send it to Scar.
After that, kill her

With that being said he closed the door

SIZWE

After the gunshots there's silence, everyone is panicking. I could see from the balcony a car driving fast. What is happening? Where is Isiphile?

Aya: babe I'm scared

Ayanda forces herself on my arm.

Me: something is not right, have you seen Isiphile?

Aya: why do you care so much about her?

Me: she's my wife!

Aya: but you don't love her!

Me: she important Ayanda

I received a hot slap.

Me: did you just?

Aya: I am only one who is important in your life, you hear me.

I walked downstairs, I don't have time for this. Met Scar looking stressed out.

Scar: they took them

Me: who?

Scar: X and Isi

He got in his car then drove fast

What should I do?

XENA

I remember that I wore the boot that has a bug and guess what. These niggas didn't check that.

All I need to do is press a button then all that is happening will be recorded.

The guy took a bucket of cold water then put it on my face. My head is literally in the bucket

He kicked the chair till it fell. I try to hide my pain. He kicks my stomach repeatedly till I cough up blood.

I wonder how isi is doing? I'm so worried about her, she did nothing wrong. These guys are after us and not her, they were the ones who stole from them(diamonds). Apparently before I came in their squad they stole those from some people. I guess these are the people. And I have nothing to do with any of this

I pretend to collapse, an evil laugh follows

Guy: hopefully you're dead.

He kicks me again. I don't dare make a sound

Then I hear footsteps disappear. Game on!

I try to reach my boot then activate the bug then let it free. There's a small camera on it so basically everything will be recorded from now on.

Minutes later I hear footsteps

"Target Number One gone. Now we have to take the others. This was pretty easy, I want you to burn her for assurance she's dead."

He crouches lower and takes the cloth off my mouth.

"They'll learn a lesson, not to mess with us again. Your boyfriend should hurry up so he can die too. Your parents will see you on your funeral, poor parents. They've been messing with us too you know. They think they own these streets...nah they got it all wrong."

What is he talking about. My parents are church members how can my rents do that shit.

"Are you sure this dog is dead." That's the boss speaking.

I try by all means to hold my breath.

"Yes sir."

He turns the chair then feels my pulse, and I take this opportunity to bite his arm. He screams in agony.

More footsteps seem to come this way

Bozz: she's alive. Take her out of here.

Me: don't you dare try something stupid or else I'll get you to the police.

Bozz: what are you talking about

I look at the mosquito flying around.

Me: see that? It recorded everything now let me go.

Bozz: (to his man) stop attacking, look Xena let's discuss this.

I laugh in a nasty way making sure he is pissed

Me: look who is begging.

ISIPHILE

I woke up from my unconsciousness. I'm tired up

I'm in the dark. A pail is on my head. I feel pain on my body. It's throbbing and feel extrutiating. My hands are tied. I try to free myself then I feel someone breathing

They took off the bucket

Some guy be staring at me.

Me: Help!!!!!! Help!!!!!!

Guy: no one is going to hear you.

Me: what do you want from me? !!

Guy: I want you to stop following our tail.

I noticed he's wearing the necklace

Me: where did you get that?

He touches it.

Guy: this, I got it somewhere. I got what I wanted, the names that is. I don't need it anymore.

He puts it on my neck

Guy: all I want is you in a coffin.

Then I hear many footsteps running past the passage.

Guy: I'm coming back.

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

47

XENA

Me: so what it's gonna be?

Bozz: let's make a deal

Me: I'm listening

Bozz: delete the footage.

Me: I'll do that in return you release Isiphile and me. Are you cool with that?

Another man came in

Man: what's happening here?

Bozz: you were right Zama this kid is smart.

Zama: What did he or whatever gender did he do?

Me: I'm a girl.

He ignored me giving his attention to the bozz

Zama: AJ what's the next move?

AJ: she'll delete the footage then we release them.

Zama: just like that? We can make the proof dissapper.

Me: in two minutes the footage will be sent to the police.

Zama: (frustrated) okay fine! Delete it!

They give me their laptop, I press the button the bug moves to me then insert it on the laptop.

They can't see what I'm doing moss so I back it up on my laptop and on my cloud storage then went to delete it so they can also see.

Me: see?

I pressed delete next thing we hear gunshots. My heart jumps in excitement,

Zama: did you contact Scar?

"Blaaaa" the window glasses fall. More gunshots follow

"Get down !!! " There's silence, now all the other guys have their guns out.

Zama's phone rings.

AJ: put it on loud speaker

Zama: hello

Caller: where are they?

That's Scar

Zama: they are here.

Scar: I want them out. With no scratch you hear me, if you dare touch them any further I'm gonna blow of your mother's brain. Apartment no. 14 Building 12, Fifth Ave street Port Elizabeth that's where she stays right?

The expression on his face is priceless. I feel like laughing at him

Scar: now do the right thing.

They let us free now I'm stepping out of this hell hole the cold breeze hitting my cheeks. By the gate is a Scar leaning on a black car looking so chilled. He's not even showing excitement as I am. Seconds later Isiphile stands by me, I look at her with a slight smile, quite happy she's safe and sound.

—

The drive back is silent

The sun is rising indicating another day. I didn't realize we took that long

Me: what's the date?

Scar: 3 May

He parked in the same guest house we used previously.

So it's only us. The three of us I don't think I should be worried there's no possibility he knows what I did.

He opens the door for us, I got out

Scar: Xena come here

I move closer then he whispers on my ear

Scar: there is a hot bath prepared for you in room number 2.

Me: okay thanks ... Um Scar

He rises his brow in a charming way

Me: thanks for being there.

Scar: no problem.

He closed the car door.

Scar: now go take a bath. I'll be with you now

I took a hot relaxing bath as indicated after sometime I went out then on the bedroom, there were some of my clothes so I wore those. When I was wearing my shoes I heard a knock

Me: who's it?

"It's me."

Me: come in

Scar came in with a man in a white coat.

Scar: he's going to be checking if you're okay and healthy.

The doctor did his thing and concluded I'm fine.

Scar: (to the doctor) on the next door is a lady please check her also.

When the doctor is gone

Me: I almost died back there

Scar: and I found your blazer and a red panty on a flat.

Me: what flat?

Scar: don't make this hard on me, what were those items doing there?

Me: oh I now remember, I was kinda tired then I took my blazer off

Scar: the panty?

Me: I don't know, it was there when I got there.

He gave a deadly stare

Advertisement

I can't look him in the eye. He looks at me for a long time. I shift uncomfortably

Scar: Xena tell the truth.

Me: okay I'll tell you the truth! I was going for a swim and then I was changing into something ...

Scar: since when do you wear *lace pants*? Since when?

Me: Do you trust me?

Scar: know what I'll call Isiphile now and I know what I heard from her. For the last time Xena speak the truth, it's not a coincidence that they took both of you.

Me: fine I slept with her is that what you wanna hear?

He remained emotionless

Me: but can we talk about how I was almost killed because of you dammit! My life was almost gone in split of a second! That's all because of you!

Scar: it wasn't only my fault. I'm sorry on behalf of the gang but don't shift this. You cheated on me with my sister.

Me: I'm sorry too

Scar: yho Xena you made me a fool.

Me: I said I'm sorry, you said you're sorry for almost getting me killed I'm saying sorry for my own faults isn't it fair.

Scar: they weren't going to kill you.

Me: They left bruises on me!!

Scar: I did my part. I made sure you're well treated but the question is what will you do to fix my broken heart?

I remain speechless. The look on his face is heart breaking, I feel so bad for what I did. I know that comparing two things that will never be the same is ...wrong on many levels

Me: I'm sorry Bongani.

His eyes are now red from anger

Scar: you told me you're not ready Xena.

Me: I ... I know there's no explanation for this but ...

Scar: you said you are not ready Xena

I hold tears threatening to fall.

Me: I wasn't.

Scar: but you slept with her. You are disgusting Xena, Isiphile is married! She is married!

Me: I know!!

Scar: um can you get out of my face before I do something I'll regret.

Where I'm suppose to go?

I don't have a phone.

Scar: get out!!

I went out and from the gate I could see Isiphile getting in a car with Sizwe.

SIZWE

Isiphile: I'm sorry

Me: about what?

Isiphile: Bongani didn't tell you?

Me: what are you talking about?

Isiphile: Xena?

Me: oh yeah she was also taken and right now Scar is still with her. Hopefully I'll get to see her, get to know how she's doing.

She signs more like in relief

Me: are you okay?

Isiphile: since when do you care?

Me: is there something wrong with wanting to know how my wife is doing?

Isiphile: yes.

Me: look I know you see me as this monster but can we work on making this better. After I heard you were kidnapped I didn't take it good. I know I haven't been the best husband but can you at least meet me halfway.

Isiphile: did your father teach you to beat women up?

She asks calmly

Me: No... I like your necklace. Can I see it?

Isi: no

We hear a knock at the window. I wheel it down

Me: hey Xena

Xena: can I get in?

Me: why what happened?

Xena: look bro I'm sorry for what I have done I know it's wrong and I promise I'll never do it again.

I'm so lost right now.

Me: what are you talking about?

Isiphile: she's talking about being kidnapped. I mean I don't know why she's apologizing, hop in Xena

ISIPHILE

I'm figuring out that something went wrong with her and Scar. I made a lame excuse for her coz I know she may be in big trouble

We reached our house. Gran will be staying with us according to Sizwe's update. He keeps eyeing the necklace

Once I got home, everyone is there which is Ayanda, Gran and X's Mother. Scar is left alone at the guest house. Gran leads a prayer thanking that we got home safe

Later on I'm sitting by the pool thinking about my life in general, I take the necklace off then I hear footsteps coming by

"Hey" I look up only to Meet Xena's eyes

Xena: what's that? Me: it's private. Xena: okay

Me: I'm joking, for you I wouldn't say that. I'm really nervous to open this. Xena: let me open it.

Me: no let me do it.

I open the necklace, there are three names in a piece of paper.

Ariana Robinson Huffington Fugasion

Xena Kabelo Daniel Xena: what does this mean?

Isiphile: I have no idea, this was stolen by my mother from her boss.

I looked at her, she licked her lips thinking. Somehow I felt kinda hot down there she's pretty sexy.

Concentrate Isiphile

Xena: (licking her bottom lip) maybe mom can know about this.

48

XENA

I went to mom in her new bedroom.

Me: yyo mama you gotta see this.

Isi also gets in

Mom: (shocked) where did you get that?

Me: what? It's like you've seen a ghost.

Mom: you weren't suppose to see that.

Isi: we've already viewed it.

Mom: listen, whatever you saw is none of your business. Give that to me.

The door is pushed then Isi's Gran comes in. She's also shocked seeing me with the necklace..

Gran: Isiphile you were supposed weren't suppose to be showing everyone.

Me: what is happening here? We saw the names, my name is in this list, why is that so?

Mom: it's a sensitive topic to talk about.

Me: I'm old enough.

Gran: honestly as much as I try to hide this I would also like to know what is in there.

I read the names again.

Me: Ariana Robinson

Huffington Fugasion

Xena Kabelo Daniel

Mom: okay I'll try to explain. Especially to you Xena. Long ago we had this employee, Isiphile's mother she was nosey I'm not sorry for saying that. She found out some information then compiled that list. I'm done explaining

Gran: and you killed my daughter for that piece of stupid information.

Mom: we made peace with that.

Isi: my mother in law is responsible for my mother's death?

Mom: we did what we had to do.

Me: basically you're a murderer.

Mom: we changed baby. We changed and became better people, we serve the living Lord.

Me: you're dragging God in everything you utter but your actions say otherwise. Y'all can I have a mother and daughter conversation.

They both went out, Isiphile was already in tears. She just found out that her mother was murdered by her mother in law I don't blame her, I feel sorry for her. Will she still look at me the same? Will she hate me too?

And now I'm facing my mother. It's only me and her in the room.

Me: explain. I want to hear everything regardless of how bad it is.

She bit her lip in a worried and red face. I should be the one who is like that. I should be frustrated but in keeping my cool. Sometimes I forget I'm only 18. My birthday is towards the end of the year, 31 October then I'll be nineteen

Me: I'm listening

Mom: Xena after I tell you this. Don't hate me. Please understand we were doing what's best for you.

Me: okay

Mom: back in the day. I and your father were involved in illegal activities, we meet up with different rich people we were friends with them. It started as a game, we were bored, we were influenced by such stuff plus poverty. I was 15 years old when I was pregnant with Sizwe, coming from Transkei what was a disgrace. I went to Jo'burg where met and I lived with your father. He is not Sizwe's biological father, his father died

before he was even born. We fell deeper for each other every day, became gangsters. We were living in Alexander at that time. We became richer and richer as we made more gigs then moved to Durban where we now live that was after our marriage. Sizwe knows it too but it's not something we talk about. We tried having kids of our own, it happened I was infertile and I had to adopt. I didn't do that though. Xena I bought you. You are not my child.

It's like a bomb has been dropped.

Me: that's not true.

Mom: the names you saw. Those are the people who we bought you from who pose to be your parents. There is an article on the internet about them most of the time they pose to be the parents of these children sold online.

Me: so you don't know where my real parents are?

Silence

Me: mom?

Mom: I don't know. These people are dangerous Xena, Ariana Robinson and Huffington Fugasion lead the underground world and they still do. They are the most wanted yet untouchable people in S.A.

Mom: most people would think you're linked or something. You might be, I don't know.

Me: are you sure you're telling me the truth?

Mom: 100% sure. The dark web where we bought you is dangerous. Xena you don't want anything that will involve you with that. We were almost got arrested because of that stupid maid who compiled that list.

Me: by that you mean Isiphile's mother?

Mom: yes. We would be in jail even today. Life sentence

Me: basically you're living your life at the expense of someone else.

Mom: the Lord forgives a-

Me: whoa woman please don't tell me about God.

Mom: that's why I said this is sensitive, you might not like it. At least if you were older you would understand. Eish even Sizwe failed to get this necklace on time so we can destroy all of this.

Me:guess what? I found out now. All I have to do is write to Khumbulekhaya most probably they will help me find them.

Mom: all I wanted was a child.

Me: bad luck for you, you got the trouble kid. I've always been headache for you and yho I see all the wrongs I did. Crashing a

car, going to parties. You must have regretted having me as a child huh?

Mom: I love you Xena

Me: but you're a murderer and a child abductor. I think I should keep my distance from you till my mind is cleared up. I'm sure it will give you the satisfaction you always wanted which is to be away from you.

SCAR

I spent the day buried in thoughts, how can she do this to me. Yho I love Xena so much and her betraying my trust like that really hit home. I was ready to commit and give my all. Just when I think j got the girl and everything is falling to place this happens. How does that happen with me me there. I was there when it happened, I let her out of my sight. She was the one who broke her own rules. Loyally, commitment

Advertisement

communication. I hate to say that I love that girl. I don't know why I have this feeling of forgiving her. Maybe she regrets herself or something, why do I feel like fixing things? Is that even normal. I should learn to fall out of love.

ISIPHILE

Gran: let me explain, don't cry kalok mzungu

I wiped my tears furiously

Me: you sold me to my mother's murderer

Gran: you know what poverty can do to one.

Me: wasn't there any other choice?

Gran: the goal was for you to finish off where your mother left.

Me: why?

Gran: you just have to Isiphile.

Me: I don't want to.

Gran: nonsense. What did the necklace have?

Me: names? Xena's name included.

Gran: I wonder. All I know was that your mother gave me this and told me to give you. Hopefully at this age you'll be matured enough to know what to do with it.

Me: I don't want this. I don't want this marriage. I want to be free Gogo.

Gran: I'm sorry mzikulu you have to be strong. You have to finish what your mom died for.

More tears fall, I wipe them Furiously.

Me: I'll try my best.

Thinking about what's expected of me. This marriage. A heir in return of what? Getting beaten? I can't wait till this is all over. This is a whole mess. This side I'm deep in love with Xena, I'm married to her brother. This is beyond complicated. I wonder how long it will take to untangle this

XENA

A lot of shit happened, there's still Isiphile on my mind. The Drama with Scar. My life is a movie. I won't lie, I miss Isiphile already. I don't know why the I feeling I have for her won't dissapper although a lot of shit is happening. I am stressed out. I am not coping. I miss being inside her, being in those warm arms, having those deep talks. I wish I can know her better you know. She knows me fully. I do not open as much as I have opened up to her. She knows me from bottom to top y'all. Everything there is to know about Xena that I aware off. If she isn't my soulmate then...

I decided to take a breather so I'll be living alone at a new apartment. All by myself.

I still have a few grands that may last me for this month. I hope they will be enough

I bought a few groceries for my new place.

Welcome to independence Xena. I have to try this cooking thing coz buying food everyday won't help.

I still need to get my stuff from Scars apartment. I can't go there now so instead I need to call Mandla ... Crap I don't have their numbers. That's because when i was kidnapped they took my phone so I had to buy myself a new phone and restart everything. Wait... I have them on Instagram. Hopefully they are online. I took my phone off my pocket then I texted Mandla

"Hey dude." It's sent

Yah I have to work neh. Fuck my books, I don't think they'll know where I put the other stuff.

Beep, I checked my messages

"What up?, I heard about the kidnapping and that you got out safe."

"Yeah man I'm safe and sound."

"What happened? Why is Scar all sad, did you have a fight or something?."

" Umm. We broke things off."

"You guys just started dating, why break up?"

"Mind your own business Mandla, that's private." I put slightly laughing emoji

He put laughing emoji also with water on top

"I was testing the waters. I'm sorry I won't be meddling in your business. I was just curious."

"Its cool. I'm glad we're on the same page." With a smiley emoji

"You and Scar are so secretive, you have a lot in common."

I decided to ignore that

"Can you do me a favour?"

"Sure"

"I'm moving out so can you take my clothes, I'll meet you halfway. I don't want to cross paths with Scar."

"Cool I can drop them off at your place, send the location. I really don't mind."

"Thanks bro, can I also have your number. I kinda lost my phone."

"07897..."

"Thank you so much bro." I sent him my location also

"Anything for our pumpkin."

I sent out a smiling emoji.

Seconds after thinking how to reply, I typed.

"Send my greetings to Fred. Tell him his pumpkin misses him dearly."

BEEP

"Will do." Then he sends a winking emoji.

I smile at that

Alright carrots, onion potatoes. I'm doing a soup today so let's go. First chop onions

Wait first open the stove. I did that then also opened TV chopped the onions while watching. I put it in the pan then chopped carrots I'm not sure it's the right size. I won't chop the potatoes

I'm tired

I cooked that. Put water on it then waited for 25 minutes. I concentrated on the TV for a while then looked at my phone

I made a phone call to Scar, I know his no by head. It's high time I apologize

It's rings, his not picking up. I called 3 more times. He's not picking up. Okay so he's ignoring me

I continued scrolling through my phone then theres a knock I went to check. Oh Mandla. Something funny is smelling here

Me: hey dude

We did a brotherly hug

He gave me the my suitcase

Mandla: what's that smell?

Wait I was cooking. Shit! I completely forgot!

My phone rang

Scar: Scar speaking hello

Me: hey Bongani, it's Xena

Tu Tu Tu

Call dropped

49

Me: my food is burnt so I might as well go eat out.

Mandla: count me in

Me: cool

We went to the nearest Cafe. Ordered an African meal. We talked

Mandla: dude you missed up yesterday.

Me: what was happening?

Mandla: there is this kid with a Mercedes Benz Vision AVTR . He is new around, apperantly from Harvard university.

Me: pshh you're lying, why would someone come all the way from the United States to WITs

Mandla: WITS is recognised internationally what's wrong with you?

Me: I don't really care, it's not like I'm interested in knowing him or what.

Mandla: I was just spilling the news

Me: if I didn't know you enough I'd swear you're gay.

Mandla: I don't wanna be left behind with Umgosi.

I chuckled at that.

He took his last spoon

Mandla: I gotta bounce. Thanks for the food dude.

Me: just like that?

Mandla: I have an assignment to complete.

Me: ohk bhuda

Mandla: Awe

We fist bump then he went out, I finished eating then a waiter came to my table.

Waiter: are you done?

She lowered herself to the extent that her boobs were visible. I'm a stud and that is ... a turn on for me. I concentrated on her eyes instead.

Me: can I get the bill?

Waiter: it's on the house (biting her lip)

She lifted her boobs lightly

Waiter: can I get your number?

Me: um I don't have a phone currently. Maybe you'll get it sometime.

I took out my wallet for the bill. She pushed the money

Waiter: I said it's on the house (fixing her cleavage, it's getting hot in here)

Me: okay

My phone rang, I answered. It's Fred

I got up to answer ended up going back to my apartment. He was sending his greetings. Hopefully I'll meet them tomorrow.

Two weeks later

.
.

After my lectures ended I got up first thing went to the cafeteria. I am hungry, I grabbed something then minutes later Scar, Fred and Mandla sat on opposite benches. I guess he told them because they've been distant lately. Scar doesn't want to talk to me. I don't know how much I should say I'm sorry. At least an apology to be accepted. Is that too much to ask? Some girl sat on his lap, yho this nigga moved on so fast huh?

Then they start kissing. I'm not hungry anymore. I took my food and went to eat somewhere else.

I sat under some tree benches next to a person I don't know.

I'm hungry now so I took my food and ate. It's a pie (steak and kidney)

"Sies, what are you eating?" Said the person next to me.

Me: food.

Person: you eat meat?

I looked at him weirdly.

Me: yes is there a problem?

Person: you are so cruel, how can you eat animals. Can't you see they are suffering

how do you feel when you slaughter a chicken to eat. That's cruel, animals are dying everyday and you are the cause. Selfish human beings!

After that speech he went to a Mercedes Benz Vision AVTR. His definitely the guy everyone has been talking about. His rude shame I won't lie but his car is dope

Finally I had the guts and courage to pick myself up. I want to know where my real parents are. I don't know where to start. Mom has given me the information she has but it's not enough. I know that I have her as a mother. To my eyes she's been an amazing mother even though she had flaws deep unforgivable

flaws but that can't be compared to the person I am today. Let's forget about the drama about my sexuality and concentrate on her teachings. Y'all that woman is amazing, she had the courage to talk to me about topics which are rare. Truth to be told, black parents never or few parents tell their kid to use contraceptives, they never tell them to wait till marriage but they are like "don't have boys" they don't explain why. When I had my first period my mom sat with me and explained that I shouldn't be sleeping with a guy because I'll get pregnant. Leading to why I shouldn't have a boyfriend from the first place. She taught me how to count the days you know the 28 day cycle of a period. When my ovulation comes, all of that stuff. I was taught. Even though she's tells me no sex before marriage, she still made sure that I took contraceptives which ended after three months. Probably the injection is gone now.

Personally I don't see the need for that coz I'm not engaging in anything that will make me pregnant. That's another benefit of being a stud lesbian that is. You can't be pregnant but if you're bisexual and having sex with a guy obviously I will which is something I don't see happening anytime soon.

Hopefully ...I have my fingers crossed on that one. I guess I'm so used to lesbian sex and a lot has been happening with regards me not being comfortable with my ...

I am now standing in front of office 321

Knocked

"Come in." I let myself in only to find she is in a consultation.

Isi: hi there you may take a seat, I'll be with you now.

I sat on the couch taking a look around her office

"Yes, you're one smart lady." She's talking to some student who came for consultation.

"If you have any more questions you can email them to me."
Still talking to her.

I looked at her book shelf. Divergent series is stored next to Harry Potter. I guess she likes reading series.

"Thank you." With that being said the girl went out.

"Hello Xena, how may I help you with today?"

She's so professional like nothing ever happened between us.
That's not what I came for so I don't trigger that topic.

Me: The necklace.

Isi: The names and all that. Okay

She types something on her laptop

"No Results" is displayed

Isi: only the article about adubtion is displayed otherwise these names don't pop out on google or anywhere. I tried to look through but nothing.

Me: have you tried the dark web?

Isi: dark web?

Me: yes they most probably gonna show.

Isi: smart move. I don't have the software right now. Xena you know the dark web is dangerous?

Me: yes but it's the only way.

Isi: this might put me in danger too. My work might be in japody

Me: fine I'll do it myself.

Isi: good luck with that.

Me: what up with you?

Isi: what about me?

Me: there's something different. It's like you're changing.

Isi: there's nothing Xena. All I can say is I and Sizwe are trying to fix things.

Me: you love him?

Isi: we are starting a family. That's all I can say. I suggest you should move on too.

Me: okay

I noticed a mark on her neck. It's like a bruise

Me: what's that?

She covers her neck uncomfortably

Isi: it's a love bite.

Me: you're lying

I can not believe my ears.

Isi: Xena move on with your life. I've moved on too.

Me: okay

I'm hurt. She's sleeping with him?! What was I expecting. She's married to this man. I'm such a jerk.

Later in the day I'm at my apartment. Playing piano lucky for me there is a piano in this room. The previous owner left it so now I use it. A door knock disturbs me so I go open

Me: Scar?

Scar: hello Kabelo. Can I come in?

Me: sure

I swayed , he got in

This is going to be weird.

Scar: um let me get straight to the point. Well after seeing you this afternoon I thought that I should come over so we can talk things through.

Me: and the lady you were with?

Scar: she means nothing to me. Look I feel like this is too much for me. I can't take it anymore

Me: I broke your heart Scar and I am deeply sorry for that. I wasn't thinking straight. Now I am focused, me and Isiphile will never get together again. I can guarantee you that.

Scar: it's good to hear that.

Me: so you forgive me?

Scar: yes. As hard as it is I forgive you Xena.

Me: we don't have to get back or what, I understand that it will be hard to g- lips are smashed on mine. He pulls me closer to him as we kiss

50

All I can say we ended fixing things and got back together. Today marks a week of us being together. I still live in my apartment.

Currently I'm playing the piano, I'm so used to waking up then play. It's something that has become an obsession these days. By the way I have booked myself an audition so I can start with my music career. I agree with Isiphile, it's a good thing to start looking for opportunities now than later. Thus my audition is tomorrow, Saturday.

"Piii" that must be Scar. He picks me up when we're going to school. It's not even that far from school but anyways

I abandoned whatever I was doing took my bag. Made sure to lock then went to the car

Me: hey you.

Scar: kiss? (Pointing his cheek)

I gave him a peck.

Scar: good

I chuckled a little then he drove off

Scar: I'm late.

Me: I'm super early

Scar: what's Poppin ?

Me: nothing much except that I'm quite nervous of what will happen Today.

Scar: the job?

Me: yep

Scar: chill I got you. It's simple, distract the person I'll take care of the rest.

Me: Fred and Mandla ?

Scar: they know their jobs chill babe.

Me: it's just that this is different, hyjacking.

Scar: similar to robbing the bank. You did a pretty good job back then.

Me: yeah. Let's hope all will go well.

He parked, looked at me

Scar: all will go well babe you got this.

I looked at his eyes all I could sense was reassurance. He leaned in our lips lock. Just a small peck then pulled off

Scar: I love you

Me: I love you too.

We went to our respective classes.

I had only two classes today so the rest of the day I was free. I went to the cafeteria bought a chicken pie

Sat alone. This sucks, sitting alone that is. It was so nice when I was doing the same course as them. We would watch ladies together, compare them argh I'm so bored.

Later on the 'mercedz benz' guy came in the cafeteria everyone looked at him. I heard his name is Shawn. Mxm he thinks he is popular. Okay he's popular but he is a dick man.

"Keep the change." That's him after he bought whatever. He's so full of himself then he came to sit at my table. You know when you sit in any table because everywhere else is full.

I closed my chicken pie

Shawn: what?

Does he have to talk?

Me: nothing

Shawn: you're the steak and kidney guy

Me: I'm a girl

Shawn: my bad. See you can't stay away from meat huh?

Me: are you a vegan?

Shawn: yes

Me: you're such a pussy.

"What's happening here?" I felt someone touching my shoulder judging by the voice. It's Scar, I looked at him.

Me: nothing babe.

A few people were now looking, people like other people's business.

Me: umh you're done with your day?

Scar: yeah

I stood up

Me: I guess we should be leaving then.

Scar: I know this may sound weird but you and that guy look alike.

Me: pshh no in a million years. His such a dick

We cracked in laughter

Scar: we're going to the warehouse or is there something you wanted in your apartment?

Me: nah.

Scar: alright

We drove to the warehouse planned and planned how this is gonna happen. Later in the day around 23:00 we hit it. There is this party that has people in high places that's where our heist will take place. We vibed a little then I had to go out act as if I left something in the car. Then the job started. Mandla did his thing, opened the cars. I drove them off. The last car was ...
Shawn's car? Mercedes Benz Vision AVTR

Me: are you sure?

Mandla: drive Xena

Me:Okay!!

I drove the car to the warehouse.

Seconds later they drove in too. "Bang" closing the door

Scar: get the tracker off

Me: how?

Scar: look at the bottom Xena, hurry up

Me: got it

I took it off

Mandla and Fred were working on other cars. Scar made a phone call I think he's contacting the buyers.

While on the other side we're painting the cars to look different.

After hours a car pulled up.

Scar: I'll go check.

The cars are ready to be sold. Scar came back with brief cases

Mandla: give them the keys

All I can say is that we're loaded,

Me: 10 million!

Mandla: time for party!

Fred: i need to get laid today no ways.

Mandla: club Vince is still open maybe we can get some free pussies there

Fred: yho Scar we're leaving (Winking at Scar)

Just like that they left

There is awkward silence

Scar: um babe

Me: I think I should be going to my apartment now.

Scar: I thought we were goi... Nevermind.

Me: no talk

Scar: I was ...going to ask if you had any plans for tomorrow.

Me: auditions.

Scar: okay (rubbing his head)

Awkward silence

Me: I think we should go now.

Scar: don't you wanna maybe spend the night at our apartment? It will be lonely since Mandla and Fred are out

Me: umm let me think. Okay.

—

We're now at his room

Me: I sleep on this side. You sleep on that side. Fair enough?

Scar: just get in bed Xena

Me: whatever (rolling my eyes)

I took off my sweatpants

Scar: who are rolling eyes at?

Me: you, see (rolling my eyes)

I took off my tshit

Scar: uyadelela Xena

Me: I know. Take off your clothes, you're gonna sleep in that?

I'm now wearing my full pant and sports bra. It's that I like wearing less clothes when I'm sleeping coz clothes tangle my body and I wake up tired. It's something that got to me last month I think.

He took his pants off and T-shirt then got in bed

I did the same.

I could feel him getting closer to me

Me: you're coming to my side Bongani. Move away

Scar: nope, you rolled your eye on me remember.

Me: I'm sorry

He wraps his arms on me. Then he kissed my neck

I turned to him, our skins are touching which is so intimate to me. He pulled me closer.

Scar: and now you will pay the price.

He kisses me, I pull out

Me: I'm sorry babe.

Scar: fine but I'll forgive you after one kiss.

I moved closer to him then locked my lips with his. He pulled me closer rubbing my back then put his his hand on my bra, I

gasped for air deepening the kiss. My body shivers, feeling excited and enthusiasm. He put his leg between my legs then moved it up rubbing on my thighs. I let out a moan I touched his earlobe playing with it as he groans moving closer pressing myself on him. Mmh this feels so good. I felt something hard poking my stomach. I pulled out

Me: what was that?

Bongani: it doesn't matter

He continues kissing me. I let that question slide. We continue kissing now it's getting real, we're breathing heavily, groans and moans are loud asf! He is kissing my neck, pressing my small boobs. I'm wet. I felt something poking me again moving in my bellybutton. In and out. I freaked out.

I closed my eyes slowly pulled out

Me: what are you doing?

He keeps quiet eyes bloodshot red.

Bongani: ohm yesses (rubs his eyes) I'm sorry Xena. It's just that I was... Mmmh

He got out of bed holding his front (dick) then went to the bathroom.

That was weird. I feel so weird. I'm freaking out. I've always been like this every time the kiss gets heated.

I took my laptop, I've got notifications. Opened then.

Finally the software is fully installed at last

I created an account, Bongani comes back from the bathroom then gets in bed.

Bongani: what are you doing?

Me: nothing serious, school work

"Access successful" is displayed on my laptop.

Finally I'm in the dark web. Basically the dark web is where the shady stuff happens, stolen pin codes, pornography.

Information about government, tax information. Child abduction. Human trafficking. Drugs being sold and it's where you can get all the information you want that does appear on the normal web e.g. Google . First thing that pops up, Murder for hire... Wait someone out there would be willing to kill people for money. I read the details. The person's name is Scar101 that's weird.

I moved to another webpage

Bongani: babe can't you work tomorrow maybe.

Me: mmmh okay

I closed my laptop. I'll continue the search for my parents tomorrow.

He pulled me close to him.

Me: good night kiss?

Bongani: no tomorrow maybe. I can't kiss you right now.

Me: why?

Bongani: goodnight babe.

Me: babe?

Bongani: yes

Me: I know this might sound weird. Maybe next Saturday we can try having.

Bongani: you're ready?

Me: not exactly but may we can try.

51

I woke up early so I can finish off where I left. Okay I went through dark web coming across Scar101 again. I decided to click on that... Something in me tells me that this is Scar. I sent a message, "hey I have a job for you. Name the price, I'll send the money to you. I know just a place to meet for the exchange."

Sent

Now we have to wait and see

I went to the homepage written "Welcome to Tor browser" then there's an onion logo, the onion that you cook everyday. Yeah that one exactly. The reason behind that is because instead of them using the ".com" on a hyperlink they use ".onion"

I typed "Ariana Robinson and Huffington Fugasion" that is my supposed parents, something popped up. Pictures of children are displayed and then prices are listed. Wait these are new born babies. How can someone be cruel... I mean they are selling babies!

I scroll through

R 105 000 each

I went back, there is a black and white video of a teen looking kid. I clicked on it. A man in black walks down the corridor with a knife on his hand. He stabs the teen kid blood gashes everywhere. I half scream in my mind it's like this is happening for real. I did happen but ... This is scary. I couldn't see the man properly thou...who would do this and take a video of it. This is so cruel! I know I am part of a gang but this brutality is very inhumane. I'm glad that I have a man who wouldn't dare do that to anyone. I trust that Bongani wouldn't do this. I pray that whoever that Scar101 is. It's not him coz I don't know....

Wow I am afraid to click any further on this. I don't want to message these people I don't wanna ... Who is Ariana Robinson? Who is Huffington Fugasion?

I wanna know so bad but I am afraid of the consequences.

I typed, took their contact details and sent a message on that.
"Hey"

"Morning gorgeous" My heart stopped beating.

Scar: What are you doing?

He tried looking at the laptop, I closed it before he does. Then he looked at me.

Me: you scared me (holding my chest)

Scar: I was greeting my future wife. Is there something wrong with that?

Me: No. Not at all.

He kissed my shoulder. I let out a deep sigh.

Scar: what's up? I know something is up. You seem uptight.

I closed my eyes brushing my face.

Me: nothing babe. Nothing is wrong, I am anxious since I have an audition today that's all.

My phone rang

Me: I have to take this.

Sizwe is displayed my screen.

Me: it's my brother

I got up went outside

Answered the call

Sizwe: hey hey lil sister

Me: hey big bro

Sizwe: I know we aren't really siblings now that you know that...

Me: I was bought.

Sizwe: look I tried to protect you from finding out the truth. I know that I was wrong but I was trying to protect you Xena. I didn't want to lose my little sister and mom too was putting pressure on me by-

Me: Sizwe, we'll always be family. I love you, you're my brother and you'll always be my brother it doesn't matter who my parents are.

Sizwe: that's so sweet

I chuckled

Me: cut the crap. You sound like thirteen year old teenager who is madly in love.

We both laugh

Sizwe: you got me good on that. Look Xena, we have a baby shower this side and I'd like if you would come. I know it's a shot notice but please pull through?

Me: baby shower for who?

Sizwe: Ayanda.

Pheww! I thought he was going to say Isiphile.

Sizwe: are you coming?

Me: umm I'll think...

Sizwe: please lil sis.

Me: ok

Sizwe: yes!!!!

Me: you're crazy (slightly laughing)

Sizwe: mxmmm I know. I have to go. My wife wants me back in bed

Which wife?

Me: too much information bro

Sizwe: wait Isiphile... I'm coming now. Bye Xena I really have to go. I love you.

Me:(lazyly) love you too.

—

I switched my phone then turned. Scar is standing by the door watching me

Me: what?

Scar: "love you too?"

Me: yes, what's wrong with that?

Scar: are you cheating on me?

Me: no I was talking to my brother Bongani.

Scar: are you sure?

Me: yes

Scar: you tell your brother you love them?

Me: yes.

Scar: that's weird.

I sigh

Me: believe what you want to believe Scar I don't care. I am telling you that I was talking to Sizwe, you don't have to agree with me. In fact (I showed him the phone call) I can call him if you want. He invited us to Ayanda's baby shower.

Scar: oh I'm sorry.

Me: I know that I once cheated but can you please try not to assume. I told you that I and Isiphile are over. We are never getting together again Scar. It's only you

I walked closer to him held his hands

Me: it's only you.

He made puppy eyes

Scar: I'm sorry babe it's just that... I thought...I am sorry.

He moved closer then put his hands on waist

Scar: I'm sorry

Me: it's fine but please don't doubt me. We should work on this. Build the trust again okay...

Scar: I will try my best sweetheart. Now come here

He pulled me closer kissed me aggressively. I feel my body temperature raising. His tongue is deep down on my throat. He pressed my butt hard a moan escapes my mouth, I push him a little. He pinned me on the wall squeezing my boobs hard I moaned loudly. Shit! He keeps touching my body all over, pressing my boobs more putting pressure

Me: ahhh!!

He groans in response then puts me on the kitchen counter, pressing his body on me, laid kisses on my neck

Me: mmh yes!

Scar: yes baby

He pressed my butt again spanking it in a pleasuring way

Me: ahhh!!!!

Slowly unhooking my gown laying wet kisses on breasts. My whole body shivers as he moves down, down I let out a breathe as a feeling of pleasure overtakes me. I'm wet already he slowly pulled my panty laying a kiss on the front of my- the door bursts open. I quickly pull my gown

Whistle's

Fred: it's getting hot in here.

Mandla continues whistling

Mandla: I'll pretend as if I saw nothing.(He whistles going to his room)

I jump off the counter fixing my gown properly.

Me: I think I should go take a shower.

Scar: mind if I join you?

Me: yes I do mind

Scar: (mumbling) Fuck!

"Number 1045" that's my cue to go. I am currently at my auditions for singing. We'll get the end results in the next two weeks

I do my thing then later on I went back to my apartment. It's lonely here, there hardly anyone who talks or makes noise unless it's a party.

I sat at my study desk, took my laptop hopefully we will get a response from my messages.

I logged in

2 new messages.

One from Ariana

I opened it

"Hello there." What do I type now.

"Umm can we meet?" That's what I typed.

I went to check the second message from Scar101

"Sure, R500 00. Let's meet at Midrand, Gauteng. I'll send you the direct location. I want the exact amount. At 00:00." This is real. Wait so instead of me choosing the location he chooses.

Interesting

"Okay, I'll be there."

Beep

"Send me the picture of this person."

I took a random picture on the net sent it.

"Got it. I'll do the job once I got the money."

Cool

Virus alert! What the fuck is my laptop doing?! A notification is displayed.

"Someone tried to crack your laptop. Would you like to strengthen your PC?"

There is a Yes and No option.

I pressed yes. Then something weird just happened. It redirected me to this black website with a lot of codes and red, green letters. What the fuck is this?

Triiiii my phone rings. My heart beats fast. It's quiet. It's raining, there is thunderstorms. It's cold. I'm nervous.

I answer without checking the caller

Me: he..llo.

"Stop what you're doing. This is no child's game Xena." I peed on myself. I could see my urine rolling down the floor

Me: Scar?

Scar: stay out of this business Xena. Stay away from the dark web

It's dangerous.

I held my breathe

Me: you're a murderer?

—

At this point I really don't know how to feel about this guy. He's a murderer why am I even asking. I never thought that he would do such. For what? For money. I switched my phone off then took a quick shower. Argh I never thought I'd be afraid to this extent. Once I'm done taking a shower I completed my hygiene process took an Uber to Sizwe's house since he had invited me over. Apparently I got there too early. I am currently at the lounge just chilling with others, y'all I can be talkative so I was talking to these ladies when someone called me to the kitchen.

I went there only to find Isiphile pilling carrots.

Isi: can you help me with cooking?

Me: I can't cook.

Isi: you'll do the easy stuff.

Me: I can't cook Isi can you call the ladies?

Isi: Ayanda's friends? no thank you.

I rolled my eyes, so she's letting them slave her around.

Isi: we invited them. Here (giving me onions) you'll chop that in small pieces.

Me: okay

I tried my best doing this thing

Isi: not like that. You wanna make the slices smaller and thin then you cut.

Doing as she says

Me: like this?

Isi: yep.

She's now grating the carrots

Isi: basically we're cooking chakalaka and I'll make pap, Sizwe is braaing meat so everything is getting into place

Me: what if I never came?

Isi: stop talking and start working girl.

I stared at her for a second while she's working on that carrot. Pheww!! My heart!

Me: yes ma'am

We continued working, apperantly I came too early and those ladies came to see Ayanda, dude they are so chilled not doing anything. Just sitting. But it's fine

Me: so I finally went through the web

Isi: it's not as fun right? (Closing the pot)

Me: Dark web is something else. I respect that place. (sitting on the kitchen counter)

Isi: I told you

Me: I'm not going through that again.

She smirked looking at me with the corner of an eye

Isi: I told you

Me: yho don't make yourself look like a pro

Isi: I am a pro (brushing her shoulder while giggling)

I threw a table cloth at her.

Isi: ouch

Me: you're so proud.

Isi: of course

Me: mxm

She chuckled, I joined in and now we're both laughing. Damn!

She is...control yourself Xena. She is your brother's wife and you don't wanna cross that line again.

We're now waiting on the pots to get ready.

Isi: in the min time we can be doing green salad.

Me: what's that?

Isi: you don't know green salad?

Me: the red mark on you arm? It's like a bruise

She pulled her shirt covering the part.

Me: Lerato what's that?

Isi: nothing Xena, stop asking

I know something is up. I walked closer to her.

Me: talk to me.

Isi: I got burnt by fire

Me: that doesn't make sense, it doesn't seem as that.

Isi: Xena this is none of your business. I ran into a pole! That's what happened!

I gave her benefit of a doubt. I don't fully believe it but I think that what can happen.. right? Me: okay. I'm sorry

We worked in silence. I tried to stop looking at her, the silence is so awkward and hard to crack. Until Ayanda came in

Ayanda: you can dish up now, the ladies are hungry.

Isi: coming right up She took out plates the we dished up.

I isolated myself. Went to sit by the pool with my food. There's good music a few people are this side and it's a party like vibe.

"It's good out here." Me: yeah

She sat at the opposite chair.

Isi: so tell me. When you were younger your mom didn't teach you to cook?

Me: No coz pots are hot. I was going to burn and plus mom was always around so she liked cooking for her husband that was that.

Isi: you should come over more often. I'll teach you.

Me: No I don't think Scar may like that. Isi: alright.

Me: thanks for the offer though

Isi: you love him? Me: uhm yes Silence

I continued eating my pork

Isi: I'm happy for you (wiping her face)

Me: I am happy for you too. I mean you're in a happy marriage.

Isi: I wish I could say that. Marriage is hard Xena

Me: you seem happy

Isi: yes I am happy... anyways how is music going?

Me: I went to auditions today.

Isi: great start, did they pick you?

Me: the results will come in the next two weeks. I'm so nervous!

Isi: you'll do just fine. I believe in you. Me: serious?

Isi: Xena you have an amazing voice. You deserve to win, don't doubt yourself

After that line I felt a boost in my self esteem. 'i have an amazing voice' did you hear that? I can't stop smiling.

Isi: wase waveza nekugqibela izinyo (even the last teeth is visible)

Me: mxm...can't a girl be happy? Isi: you're right (chuckled)

There's normal silence for like 2 minutes

Me: the books in your office, you read them?

Isi: which one's? Me: Harry Potter

Isi: yes. I read it. I love that series so much. I'm currently reading Harry Potter and the order of the phoenix. Fifth book

Me: it has witches, what's nice about that?

Isi: you should read it. You'll understand

Me: and Divergent?

Isi: I will read that when I'm finished with Harry Potter

Me: I once read Divergent series. There's a girl named Tris short for Beaurtrice and then there is Four her instructor they f-

By this time Isi has her ears closed

Isi: you're a spoiler Me: okay I'll stop talking then

Isi: we can start over and be friends you know.

Me: umm that isn't a bad idea

"It is a bad idea." I turned only to meet

Me: Scar? Scar: can we talk?

Me: um okay sure

We're in his car I'm kinda nervous I don't know why. I've done nothing wrong

Scar: 'friends' huh?

Me: it was nothing serious.

He started the car then drove off

Me: where are we going?

Scar: to my apartment.

Me: who are you?

Scar: what do you mean?

Me: what I saw, you know what I'm talking about don't act dumb!

Scar: What were you doing on that site?

Me: in search for my parents

Scar: you didn't tell me.

Me: I didn't want to bother you

Scar: bother me. It's fine, Xena you are mine. I am yours what happened to communication?

Me: it's just a sensitive topic Scar

Scar: okay

Me: now what answer me this. Why do you do what you do?

Scar: what you saw is none of your business.

Me: that scared the shit out of me and you wanna say it's none of my business!! You better stop playing coz y'all this is no joke. I wanna know who I am dating with...

Scar: you don't see me asking you about what you and Isiphile talked about.

Me: babe. Honestly right now you're being a dick! You told me that I cannot be alone with her. That wasn't the case. There were people around, we were talking about random things. I killed no one now can you tell me about you!

Scar: I am a KILLER. I breathe out.

Me: right Scar: happy?

Me: why?

Scar: that's how I started Xena. I can't control it, it's who I am. I am a professional killer. I went for training. I started when I was 15. One of my friends introduced me to this thing. You know when you're poverty stricken you do anything just to put food on the table. I'm not an angel X. I am deeply sorry that I am not the kind of person you thought. This is the real me and I was Afraid to tell you coz you may leave me. I love you Xena and I really don't wanna lose you. Before I met you look You brought happiness in my life Xena even though we went through some patches but I can't unlove you I can't fall out of love with you. I can't control it. I can't think straight when you're not next to me. I love you Xena.

Me: I love you too Bongani. I really do but if you'd promise me not to involve me in your things, I don't wanna be kidnapped or what.

Scar: I promise baby. I'll protect you with all I have.

Scar is not the type of person who makes promises. If he says it like this. Most probably he will keep it.

He brushed my chin

Scar: I love you

Me: I love you too.

He leaned in then we kiss passionately

Week later

.
. .
.

I was in my apartment playing piano. It's Saturday morning and the first things I thought was this instrument.

BEEP, I got a message.

"Good morning babe, wear something nice. I'm taking you out."

So he took me out for breakfast. We spent the day together, went to Mall of Africa, went to Sun city having time of our lives. We were now hungry so we went to McDonald's ordered burger.

Scar: you wanna eat here?

Me: yes I am hungry hungry.

Guess who we met ...not exactly but saw ..he was talking so loud.

Shawn: they stole my beautiful car!!! Just imagine baby. It's fine my insurance will sort it out! I hate South Africans. They are stinking and such losers ...

Girl: I agree with you baby.

Shawn: I BOUGHT A NEW CAR. It's nothing big. It's called Lamborghini Aventador!!!

Do you want my black card for shopping?

When I say everyone was looking at them. I'm not exaggerating.

—

He drove to hotel, we went to the penthouse

Scar: close your eyes.

Me: why?

Scar: it's a surprise close your eyes.

I closed my eyes then he opened the door

Scar: open

Wow! Candles lit...red roses on the floor.

Scar: and this is where the magic will happen.

Me: this is so cute! Thank you for doing this for me

I leaned in for a kiss grabbing his shirt. He responded, deepening the kiss grabbing my butt squeezing it he lifted me then I wrap my legs around him he went to my neck, thew me on the bed

52

SHAWN

Me: It's over Barbie doll.

I was talking with my so called girlfriend on the phone. Her real name is Zethu but since she's a cake of makeup I call her Barbie

Zethu: but baby I love you moss can't you see that?

Me: if I wasn't rich would you still like me?

Zethu: yes baby njena.

Me: listen, I am tired of your big lossy pussy. I need a fresh one, in fact bring back all the money I spent on you plus the car I bought you. All of those items must be here as in yesterday! Are we clear?!

Zethu: after everything I gave you. You are the same as all other men Shawn ... Where do you think I will get the money now?
Mxm phuuu uyinja marn!!! In fact ...(cries)

I switched off my phone. I'll get a new girlfriend in no time. It's nice being wanted by everyone

I went downstairs for dinner

Me: evening everyone

Father: you're late.

Me: I had an important call sorry

Mother: take a sit Shawn.

Me: is everything okay?

Mother: I have something to tell you.

Siya: you seem tense (that is my older brother)

Mother: tomorrow you will be meeting your little sister.

Me: which sister?

The whole table is looking at her in anticipation

Mother: I know I have a lot of explaining to do. I am going to tell you the whole story. When I and your father

ISIPHILE

Ayanda: ungalibali ukuhlamba ipanty yam (don't forget to wash my panty)

Me: you're mad Ayanda.

I said putting my clothes on the washing machine

Ayanda: sthandwa sam uyamva uthini!! (Love, you hear what she's saying?)

Shit! She's calling Sizwe

Me: Ayanda ngiyakucenga, uzongibulala uSizwe (please don't, Sizwe will kill me.)

Ayanda: hlamba le panti ke (wash this panty then)

She threw her panty on my face, argh it's smelling rotten fish.

Ayanda: make it quick, I want you to do my nails and hair.

Me: of course

She disappeared to the kitchen. I hate my life. I wonder when will I get pregnant so I can get over with this. Give Sizwe his heir and then I'll be gone! Why did gran have to borrow these funds from them. Why did mom steal a stupid necklace?

I went to check on the pots. I'm cooking while doing laundry after this I have to mop the house. While I was cooking, stirring at the pot i felt someone tapping my shoulder.

I turned, Sizwe is standing in front of me.

Me: I did nothing wrong Sizwe please don't (hiding my face)

Sizwe: not today. Uhm did you do the test?

Me: yes I did.

Sizwe: please tell me you are pregnant.

Me: sadly they came out negative.

Sizwe: you better be playing with me Isiphile. (Pulling a long face)

Me: let's try again maybe.

Sizwe: we've done everything, it's been a more than a month still you're not getting pregnant. What's happening?

Me: let's try again. Maybe this time I will be pregnant

I feel less of a woman. We've been trying and trying but nothing. I don't understand why can't I get pregnant. Ayanda is pregnant with a girl, why can't I get pregnant?

I try to hold my tears. Don't cry Isiphile please don't cry. Be strong. I wish I had a friend. Someone to share my pain but guess what? I don't. Being a therapist doesn't help either

Life sucks!

XENA

This is the moment.

He threw me on the bed. Lay kisses on my neck...I could feel his breathing pacing up. I moan as he kissed my neck in a ticklish manner then his hand traveled on my breasts squeezing then hard, I let out loud moan. A feeling of pleasure overtakes me as he squeezed them again then takes off my tshit and sports bra. I try calm myself down breathing out using my mouth. He pulled off my trousers. I let out a sigh, I'm nervous and anxious

plus excited at the same time. I'm only wearing a panty now. I wear normal panties not lace or what....

He made traces on my thighs then lay wet kisses between them moving closer licking them he reaches for my temple kissed it then breathe out on it.

Me: (moaning) oh Scar

I feel electrified mmh. He brushes my nunu moving up and down

I'm patting mmh this ... mh he slowly pulled my panty off then kissed my nunu, spread my legs ...

It's now or never.

I let out a calm sigh as he eats it, licked it, muffed it going deeper. My breathing is increases second by second.

He put his tongue deeper. I hold on the sheets

Me: ahhhh!!!

Scar: yes baby

He does that for some time then a hard something enters.
Mmhh

Scar: you're so tight

I half scream in pain and little pleasure. This is so unusual for me. He pushes one more time, I feel like my Vj is tearing up.

Me:ahh!!!

Scar: does it feel good ?

I slowy nod

Mmmh he moves in further mmhh. This is so strange and nice. Then slowly moves out

He thrusts in again he slowly moves out. I feel like ... shaking in pleasure yho his thing must be big no way. He thrust in and then pulls out pulls me closer I start grinding. I can't believe this. This actually feels good. He moves in putting more pressure it's slides in and moves out. I start shaking, excitement and enthuse overtaking me

He starts moving faster and faster, in and out, in and out

Me: ahhh!! Jfjdhs

Holding on him brushing and pushing toward me so he can go deeper.

Then moved in circles thrusting in and out, in and out, in and out , in and out spanking my butt

Me: deeper!

Moving deeper and faster oh goodness brushing, squeezing by boobs, my butt. He is literally on my womb. He pounds in. I held on the sheets like my life depends on them

Me: I'm coming!

He thrusts in deeper hitting my G spot

Me: ahhhh!!!!!!

I could hear him grunt and groaning in response. He continues while I cum. Then pause yho I start vibrating, my body shaking realising liquid I feel him kiss my temple. He eats my cum.

Licking me clean digging my pussy further eating me straight

Me: yesess Bongani

Scar: yes baby say my name

I bite my lower lip as he continues to lick me further. Then he stops and Insert the thing again pushing it in

53

I woke up next to ...wait where is Bongani? I blocked the sun piecing through the window indicating that it's yet another day. When I was about to get up he walked in with a tray with a neatly done breakfast

Aww

Scar: Good morning sleeping beauty

It has a rose on the side

He put it on the bedside then gave a peck on my lips I giggle in between the kiss

Me: you did this for me?

Scar: only for you princess

Aw I feel so special right now. This is so cute, no one has ever done this for me. There's a first time for everything I guess

Me: thank you babe

Scar: it's a pleasure now sit up straight so I can feed you.

Me: alright

He cut the bacon mix it with lettuce then put it in the fork

Scar: tshup tshup

Me: you're serious gonna feed me?

Scar: open up babe

I blushed slightly laughing

Scar: stop acting Xena I know you are a food killer

Me: me? Food killer?

I held my heart

Me: I'm hurt

I could see he was holding laughter ...mxm he doesn't even care. This dude just said I'm a food killer. I hit him with a pillow, he burst out laughing. I threw another pillow he dacked so it hit the wardrobe.

Me: I dare you to say "Xena is not a food killer"

I got up took the pillow

Me: say it.

He continues laughing at me even tears falling on his face

Scar: okay okay Xena is a food killer

Then he bursts out laughing I threw the pillow at him tears threatening to off my eyes. I'm hurt like literally

I went to the bathroom wiping my tears

Scar: okay Xena I'm kidding.

Me: no you're not

Scar: I was joking baby

He came in too then wiped a tear that just fell

Scar: I was only playing with you. Don't take it serious. You know that you only eat one spoon then you get full. I mean look at you. You're gorgeous babe

I smiled kinda happy, I hate it when people say I eat a lot.

He leaned in then smashed his lips pulled out

Scar: I love you

Me: I love you too.

We continue kissing something made a weird noise. It's my stomach grumbling. I pulled out

Me: oh I need to eat.

Scar: one round baby

Me: I need to eat first

Scar: but I need to eat you first

I blushed

Me: um

He bite his lower lip pulled me close then started the kiss slow his hand traveled way down to my nunu I gasped then he inserted one finger while kissing me slowly moved it in then out of my Vj then in, I let out a moan. He moves faster then carried me to the bed took off my gown laying me on bed spread my legs. Without warning entered ... This is not supposed to happen.

Me: Scar

He's already dived right on it

Me: Bongani!

He pulled out with a slight groan. His eyes red and small

Me: we didn't use a condom.

I can't believe I let his happen, I don't wanna be pregnant just imagine! Why did it clicked now?

Scar: we will buy pills later

Me: go get them now.

Scar: babe after o-

Me: Bongani (giving him a serious look)

Scar: okay Xena (annoyed)

Me: don't you dare give me that look. This is not my fault that we had unprotected sex, I'm trying to build my future here I

don't wanna be having kids now! Please do me a favour and get those pills or I'll go get them myself.

—

Okay I'm joking. That's seriously very embarrassing for me I mean ... Yho just imagine being a girl that looks boyish buying after pills ...I'd rather get a friend to do it for me. Coz yhoo...

He went out while I took the food and ate. After I ate, I felt hungry so I ordered Burger and two medium pizzas. Mmh I am hungry hungry!

My phone rang

ISIPHILE

Xena: hello

Me: hey you

My heart starts getting worked up. If there was an eraser of feelings I definitely would rub them off.

Xena: what's up?

Me: um I have good news for you.

Xena: okay

I hate this awkwardness. This is so freaken weird

Xena: yeah (she's definitely smiling right now)

Me: um can we meet?

Xena: what's up, you're making me nervous.

Me: 14:00 I'll send you the location. Please don't miss this I know it's a short notice but please pull up X.

Xena: you're making me curious Rato what is it?

She called me Rato. That's a cute nickname

Xena: what is it that you can't say over the phone?

Something about her accent makes her more sexy and attractive. I am definitely into this girl and I don't think I really e- argh I'm sure that I love her but maybe the stars will be re written or something.

Me: Chao !

I dropped the call. A knock came through my office, I was in the middle of some case of car hyjacking. There's this kid called Shawn, he is nagging

Advertisement

always at our offices about the outcome of his case. One thing I can tell you is. He is headache I don't get why he doesn't let us do our-

"Did you find it?"

Me: We're still working on it.

Shawn: Amen!

Me: we will tell you when there is something we found.

Shawn: you don't know your work, all you do is talk! Talk! Talk!
Nxa bloody South Africans

Me: are you done?

Shawn: I want my car! Do you have any idea How much that car costs?!

Me: just yesterday you said you bought a new car and you won't be bothering us again.

Shawn: I changed my mind!

I breathe out

His phone rang

"Are you ready kids?"

Aye-aye captain.

I can't hear you...

Aye-aye captain!

Ohhhhhh! Who lives in a pineapple under the sea?

SpongeBob SquarePants!

Absorbent and yellow and porous is he!

SpongeBob SquarePants!"

By the time he answers I'm already in tears of laughter. He has that as his ringtone?! Wow

After he left I also packed my things so I can get to meet Xena

I should tell her that....

XENA

I was now taking the pills

Me: give me two more

Scar: you already ate one

Me: I wanna make sure, no give me three more. Wait... You bought pain killers?!

Scar: didn't you say pills mara?

Me: I'm so doomed right now.

Scar: I'm sorry babe mara you didn't specify

I finished off the last piece of the second medium pizza.

Scar: I'm sorry babe

Me: I need to get more food. I'm so stressed!

I took a shower you know what it's fine I'll get these pills myself. Yjo

—

I went to the chemist. Look I don't really care shame. I bought the morning pill, the cashier be looking at me nasty. Damn girl I need to buy this so I was like I don't care! Buzz off

It's all about sucking in that fear and acting tough. I ate two pills

BEEP! Message came through

Isi just sent the location. It's a cafe opposite to this chemist. Lucky me

I crossed over the robots, got in the cafe, found Isi at some cosy window

Me: hey

Her face lit up, she genuinely smiled, not to brag or what ...her look was priceless. She looked like a god damn angel like there's no worries. Y'all she looked beautiful! But I won't say it. I maintained a straight serious face

Me: yeah?

Isi: no hug?

Me: No what did you wanna meet up for?

Isi: okay no hug. (Fake smiled) I picked off where you left and found your parents.

Me: what?

Truth to be told. Scar doesn't really want me to talk about my parents. Ever since that day we never talked about. I should tell him about these news

Isi: I got your parents. I think they should be here any time soon. Only your mom is coming though

Me: how did you do it? That place is risky business Isi how did you-

Isi: you forgot to log out, two you didn't use VPN three I hacked your account.

Me: really? You hacked my account?

Isi: and secured it. I wanted to do the right thing you know and make someone happy because I love... I love ...To look at..the...sky

"Isiphile right?"

I lifted my eyes meeting a good looking woman on her thirties. She looked young shame

Isi: yes ma'am please take a seat.

She looked around the cafe

Lady: this place smells stuffy. It's really a low class Café argh...
Out of taste.

Isi: I'm sorry about that ma'am.

She's been standing for a good minute now

Me: you can take a seat.

Lady: no thank you. There are gems on that seat.

She put hand cream on her hands.

Lady: You must be Xena. I'm Victoria Daniels, your mother

It makes sense. On the necklace. The third word was Xena
Kabelo Daniels. Why didn't I think of searching it like that?

Me: oh so Who is Ariana?

Lady: it's a long story my child but I will tell you everything, let's
go to the car.

Me: I'll call you later Rato.

Isi: ok (slightly smiles)

54

Aaron

"Aaron Peter!!!"

Me: here!

The police walk towards my cell.

They open my cell walked me to the reception. Took out the hand cuffs

Police: you are a free man

Me: how did ...?

Police: you are on parole didn't you get those news?

Me: no

Police: Your father came to discuss your issue.

Me: The one and only Lindelani Peter?

Police: yes. But you will also do community engagement for 2 years

With that being said. I am free. It's only been 4 months of being in jail and I am out! It's good to be out again! When I walk out My father is waiting for me. Yes!!! I know he's been absent in my life but this is the best thing he's ever done for me.

ISIPHILE

"where are you?"

I fixed the position of my phone answering Sizwe's call.

Me: I'm coming.

I dropped off the Call. Apparently we will be having a scheduled meeting with a doctor to do some testing. We want to find the root problem of why I haven't been able to conceive yet

Finally I am at this hospital. I saw him wearing his white Doctor coat. Tapped his shoulder as he was busy speaking with some lady.

Me: Hey

He turned

Sizwe: about time. Let's go.

I don't do any more talking, its normal for me because now there is Ayanda everything is favouring her.

We do the test and we were told it's going to take sometime but I wasn't in a rush so I wait till the results came.

Doctor: Alright the results are back. Should I read them or you read them?

Me: is it good news?

Doctor: uhm I'd rather not say unless you want me to read the whole report.

Sizwe: read it out please.

Me: No I want to read them myself

He gives me a blood shot look

Me: Okay Dr read them. (I fake smiled)

Doctor: (looking at the paper) so according to the results here it states that Sizwe Mlanjana is fertile but the problem is with Mrs Mlanjana (looks at me over the spectacles) I'm sorry Mrs you cannot have babies. You're infertile.

Me: What?

XENA

So I'm waiting on my so called mother to do her explanation. At last my prayers have been answered. The only thing I wanted was to get to know my real parents are

Victoria: As I said.

I shift uncomfortably

Victoria: are you sure you're sitting comfortably? This is an expensive car for you to be sitting uncomfortably

Me: yeah I'm good.

Victoria: um Xena that's the name I gave you. I'm sure you're wondering why all of a sudden I appear now. I have been trying to get hold of your whereabouts but I didn't know where to start.

Me: you're rich. You could have hired a PI

Victoria: it's not as easy Xena.

Me: okay... So can you tell me why I was sold for some cheap money on the dark web?

Victoria: We needed the money. I know this sounds weird but at that time we had enough kids and we didn't afford to have more please understand

Me: what did you just say?

Victoria: I was only 18 when I had you as an addition to the 2 sons I already had. Twins which is Shawn and Siya Daniels

Me: oh you kept them but you couldn't keep me?

Victoria: We were young Xena. Just imagine being a mother at 16 then two years later have another child. We had to give you up

I feel so abandoned and small and left out. I know that it was the situation but this woman didn't love me enough to keep me why didn't she give up her son's then? Why me? Why did she give me up?

Wait so Shawn is my brother. That's funny

Victoria: look I'll make it up to you. I know that I can't restore the time I lost but maybe you can move in with us.

Me: I have my own apartment.

Victoria: I can pay your rent.

Me: I have money to pay for it.

Victoria: maybe we can have some dinner today.

Me: umh not today

Advertisement

when I am free. I'll let you know.

Victoria: I'm so happy to finally meet you my child.

She brushes my cheek then her phone rings.

Victoria: hello.... Okay. I'll be there in a few. (Switched it off) look honey I have a meeting in an hour can I drop you off at your apartment because you're going to make me late.

Oh really?

Me: okay

As she drives I receive a call from Scar.

Me: hey babe

Scar: hey Princess

My heart melts

Scar: uhm I won't be available tonight because I have back to back meetings and this is very important.

Me: meeting for what?

Scar: nothing to worry about babe. It's just some errands nothing to worry about.

Me: What is it that I can't worry about?

Scar: look babe. I'm running late. My meeting is starting in like 30 minutes so I'll see you tomorrow. I love you so much

Me: love you too.

Tut tut tut

Victoria: boyfriend?

Me: yeah

Victoria: I'm surprised.

She parked at my apartment.

Me: see you.

I got out without even a word. Got in my apartment. I remembered that I was going to call Isiphile so I dialed her number

Ringing

She answers

Isi: hey (sounds down)

Me: hey girl! What's up?

Isi: uhm good

Me: are you good?

Isi: I'm fine X

She blows her nose

Me: where are you?

Isi: it doesn't matter X. How did it go with your mother?

Me: Great. I'm worried about you. Where are you?

I got in my shoes ordered an Uber

Isi: I'm in my office at the department.

Me: I'm coming there now

Isi: why?

I dropped the call

Right then the Uber appears so I go to it.

It went straight to WITs then I got to her office.

Knocked

She opens

It's like she's been crying

Me: what happened?

She wipes her face

Isiphile: Nothing

Me: Lerato? (Giving her a stare)

Isiphile: um (tears fell)

My heart just broke seeing her in tears, I found myself hugging her then she cries on my shoulder. The way she's crying is non stop

I'm brushing her back patting her trying to calm her down.

Isi: this is so embarrassing. I shouldn't be crying

Me: No you have every right to cry baby.

She continues crying and I'm just worried about what happened to her

Me: did someone hurt you?

She pulled out. Her eyes are puffy so I wiped her tears using my hand. I had no tissues guys

Me: talk to me. What happened?

She sat on her desk legs swinging in the air.

Me: take your time

I held her hands kissed them then moved closer to her tightening the grip on her hands then stood between her legs as more tears fall

Me: please Rato talk to me. You know you can trust me

She let out a shaking sigh having hic cups. I wiped a tear rolling off her chin

Isi: I don't even know where to start.

Me: you can start any where.

She looked at me with sparkling eyes

Isi: please don't judge me X.

Me: I won't judge you Rato I promise

Isi: Sizwe has been beating me up and I just found out that I can't ...(tears roll) that I can't have babies Xena... I can't

More tears fall and she's crying like crazy. I feel for her. That must be hectic plus Sizwe has been laying a hand on her

I also cry. We're both in tears she's crying on my shoulder and I'm crying on her shoulder

Kuyilonto

55

ISIPHILE

This is so comforting and feels home. She's holding me tight brushing my back making me feel at ease as she repeatedly strokes my back. She pulls me closer my head on her neck and we stay in that position for a long time till my phone rang. I try pull off

Me: X I have to answer my phone

She lets me go when I take a look at her, her eyes are red from crying.

She's been crying with me too. I really don't know how to react

I answered the call

"Where are you?" I suddenly get a fright

Xena: who is it?

Me: I am coming Sizwe.

I pushed Xena so I can get my things and go.

Xena: (whispering) where are you going?

I slightly push her but she won't let me go.

Me: (whispering) let me go

Sizwe: who are talking too?

Me: no one. I am coming back just now w-

Did she just take my phone and switched it off.

Xena: you are not going back there

Me: you're crazy Xena that's my husband.

Xena: husband my foot Lerato I am not letting you to go back there!

Me: he will kill me!

Xena: no he won't.

Me: give me my phone !

I want to cry so bad why is she being so hard on me. Sizwe will be mad and yhoo

Me: X!!

She takes my purse.

Me: what are you doing?

Then types something on her phone.

Xena: Isi I care about you and I am not going to watch you suffer. Have I made myself clear?

Me: you don't know him Xena. Sizwe can -

Xena: have I made myself clear?

Me: oh X (biting my nails) I am so dead right now oh my goodness. Give me my purse !

I try grab it she puts it up. I jump but her hand goes higher as she's tip toeing

Me: I am not playing.

Unexpectedly she rans out so I ran after her. Gosh this girl can't be serious when we're outside she stands next to a car then put my stuff there

Xena: come get it

I went in the car

XENA

I also got in

Me: driver, hit it.

I gave him the location to my apartment

Isi: you're not serious right now.

Me: ohh

And now there is no other choice but for her to stay where it's safe and secure. I open the door to my apartment

Me: ladies first

She slightly smiled.

Me: is that a smile I see?

She blushed hiding her face

I lit the heater

Me: you can make yourself feel at home. I have a couch. A chair. A bed where the magic happens chose any

She sits on the couch then stares at me

Isi: nice apartment.

Me: you like it?

Isi: I love it. It's homely

Me: (smirking) thanks

She blushed, I licked my lips

Me: so what do you want to eat?

Isi: nothing ...honestly I really appreciate how you're here for me.

Me: you were there for me too when I was going through the most.

Isi: it's different

Me: no it's not.

I sat next to her, I want to say something smart but I can't bring myself to say it

Me: do you want something to eat? I have rusks and coffee.

Isi: coffee

Me: coming right up.

I went to the kitchen area made coffee and rusks for her then went to run a salt bath. It's really relaxing and reliving stress... I made it extra by putting roses setting a mood.

I got back to the lounge area

Me: I have a bath for you so you can go.

Isi: I'm fine X.

Me: I'm not asking you. I'm telling you, you can use my face cloth for now

Isi: You don't have to be like this.

Me: let's not argue

Isi: okay

She went to the bathroom while I took the cup of finished coffee then wash that. Started pilling carrots, grated those basically I'm doing chakalaka. Then pilled potatoes and pumpkin. I did green salad then orded an already made chicken coz I can't cook chicken yet.

She's really taking her time

Eish I walked to the bathroom but first knocked

Me: Rato

Isi: don't come in.

Me: I'm going by the shops I'll be back in a minute.

Isi: okay don't take long

I went to Jet lucky before it closes. I got her a few clothes she can change into. I'm not sure if she'll like these but anyways. I bought some lace panties I know she wears those. I'm not sure about the bra so I just bought two sport bras and other essentials.

I got back. Just when she got out of the bathroom with a towel around her body

She's looking like a snack there

Isi: ..right?

Snap out of it. I heard nothing coz I was busy staring at her

Me: huh? Did you say something?

Isi: I was asking if I could use the sealed tooth brush. I can't right?

Me: You can.

Concentrate Xena! Don't get distracted. You have a boyfriend and you don't wanna disappoint

She turned going to the bedroom

Me: uhm yho

This towel is so small now her butt cheeks are all out and I'm not an ordinary girl. I'm a stud Fam! I don't blame her thou. It's the only towels I have

Me: I have your things here. I'm not sure if they are fine

Isi: aww X you didn't have to. Thanks though

Me: stop saying thank you

She made a puppy face

Me: you're so cute right now

She blushed then took the plastic

Isi: thanks

And locked the room. I on the other side went to dish up for the both of us I hope I cooked well

She later comes out wearing pink cute PJs.

Me: you can take my gown.

Isi: I am alright with this

Me: it's cold Rato go wear a gown

Isi: okay then

She disappeared to the bedroom while I put our food on the lounge table

I put some snacks that I had too.

I could see her peeked through the door

Me: come out

Isi: This gown is small

Me: come out.

She went out

Isi: it's tight, I can't even move

Me: you're right. You look like a robot

Isi: you're making fun of me?

She threw a shoe at me I ducked then it hit a Jag of water

Me: oops

We burst out laughing

—

It's now an hour later. We're watching TV or should I say the TV is watching us coz we were now chatting.

Me: so what happened next?

Isi: acted as if I was taking clothes. It's really nice growing up shame. At that time Bongani was also doing michevous things.

Me: so why are you not with him now then I mean you know what I mean ?

Isi: bustard cheated.

Me: that's sad.

So she was telling me how she lost her virginity back in high school. It's a funny story and sad what I can say is that I'm glad that she can open up to me like this.

Me: you'll find true love one day.

In heart I know that I might be her true love I said "might"

She looks at me smiling for sometime

I chuckled playing with her small fingers

Isi: what is love?

Me: You asked the wrong person I don't really know shame

I rubbed her inner hand she let out soft giggles

Me: what? (Chuckling)

Isi: nothing

I rubbed her hand again

Isi: stop (pushing my hand)

Me: okay

I moved my hand to her stomach.

Isi: what are you doing? (Smiling)

I unbuttoned her top Pyjama

She let out a sigh then I brush my hands on her stomach. She breathed out heavily

Me: ha

Isi: what?

Me: you grow hair on your belly

Isi: (embarrassed) yeah

Then chuckles weirdly

Me: I think it's cute

I kissed her stomach.

Isi: mh (moans)

Then blow some air making bubbles like fat she giggles as I do more and more of it. The atmosphere is filled the laughter and happiness.

Uzalo starts playing

Isi: stop X my favourite show is playing

I stop then take fleece blanket we cuddle watching the show. She automatically lays on my chest then I kiss her cheek caressing after. I feel she's smiling

Okay so now I have to think on how Sizwe will... This is not going to be easy. Sizwe is my brother but he ... I'll try to...
Uhm

I hear a door knock so I go check only to find Bongani at the door with Flowers.

Bongani: good evening babe... Is that Isiphile?

"Scar... What are you doing here?" I said surprised. The last time I checked he wasn't available tonight. What is he doing here now?

Scar: my meetings ended early now answer me this. What is she...doing here?

The way he said that was so down and disappointed.

Me: it's not what you think babe I promise.

Scar: how is she here with you then ?

Me: Please let me explain.

Scar: snacks, fleece Xena

He looks at me with veins popping on his scalp breathing evenly

Scar: you're making me mad.

Isiphile: Twinie it's not what you t-

Scar: SHUT The fuck UP!!!

My heart is really beating fast right now. I'm scared of what may happen next. He's not even giving me a chance

Me: Babe

He yanks me off.

Isi: Bongani please let me explain

He pulls out a gun and points it at Isiphile

Scar: I let it slid the first time but this time around. You're dead

He pulls the trigger while I jump in front of Isi "thffff " the bullet goes in my skin.

Lights out

SIZWE

It's been hours yet Isiphile is not back from work. She doesn't answer her phone. Only God knows what I'll do to her when she comes back. Arghhhh I am so frustrated!

Sizwe: khophinde uphone Ayanda (call again)

Aya: she's not answering

use your phone nawe.

Sizwe: I have but she's not answering my calls, ndikuxelele moss (I told you)

Aya: she's cheating definitely.

Sizwe: are you sure?

Aya: izolo I saw her with our Manager baby the way she was looking at him then later they were having lunch.

Sizwe: Serious?

Aya: mdivose man ulsiphile akakwazi kubanabantwana sithwangu thwangu somntu nje(divorce her, you know she can't have kids)

Sizwe: I can't do that, you know that moss.

Aya: but baby look at what is happening now?

I called her again. I'm seriously worried right now what if she's kidnapped or worse something bad happened

Me: babe let's go report her at police station.

Aya: kuthen wamkhathalela kangaka loo Isiphile? (Why do you care about her?)

Me: she's my wife!

Aya: oh so what about me Sizwe? I'm engaged to you nje

Me: that's the difference. You are a fiance and she is my wife!
Let's go look for her

I pulled her hand

Aya: I'm pregnant nje

Me: Ayanda!! (Giving her a stare)

Aya: andizukwenza obobubhanxa mna! Yintoni lento anayo ndingenayo mna! Huh? Sizwe phendula!!! yintoni oyibone kula mntana man. I am the only one you should love not her! (I won't do that, what does she have that I don't have, Answer me! What did you see in her!)

Tears were falling her face.

Me: Ayanda andizuva ngawe mna masembe siyokhangela ulsiphile (I won't be told by you what to do. Let's go look for her)

I took my car keys while she walked slowly pushing her stomach forward by purpose. I mean I can see it.

ISIPHILE

Oh my god oh my god. She took a bullet for me. I wasn't expecting this.

Scar is shocked at what just happened I'm also shocked but in that..

Me: oh what did you do?

Blood flows on the floor she's laying there helpless

Scar: don't call the ambulance

I kneeled down next to her crying shaking her hopefully she will wake up

Me: X wake up

Scar is walking up and down stressed.

Me: call the ambulance stupid!!!

Scar: I called a doctor!

Scar: we don't need a doctor! She's dying! (I looked at her face) please wake up Xena

I shook her

Me: call the ambulance dammit!

I try to cover her stomach coz too much blood was coming out.

Oh god

I called the ambulance coz that stupid doctor is taking a long ass time will she's dying here

"..what do you mean. You're fully booked?!"

And that was Scar. He seems to be arguing.

Few minutes later I hear sirens I open the door and they take her while I follow with my car

SCAR

So she wins huh? I am in a competition to win my girlfriend. Why do they always have to end up together while I suffering? Why did she take a bullet for her? Rethinking what I almost did. If I killed her right then I'd be arrested obviously. I need to be more strategic, I know I'm smarter than this

I follow with my car to the hospital. They are already taking her to the ward I'm worried. Pacing up and down. Isiphile rushes in

Me: back off Lerato you're not welcome here!!

Isi: sure I am.

Me: you surely want to be killed right. Now back off!!!!!!

Aaron

It's been a while since I got out of prison. Honestly it's good to be back. Now I have one thing to do that I've been meaning to do. Get revenge on Xena.

Dad: what are you thinking about?

Me: nothing serious

Dad: alright so I think it's time you meet your siblings. They live here in Jo'burg.

Me: right? It's about time

My thoughts went back to the person who led me to jail. Her Name is Keke Rulte apperantly she's a special agent, works for CIA and works for or related to Xena somehow. I know just a person to do the work, Scar101 on the dark web. My main goal is to get...

Dad: Isiphile and Bongani are their names They are twins I'm sure you'll love them

Me: I hope so too

56

SCAR

When Isiphile left I made sure I call Sizwe so she can go back to her husband

Sizwe: hey brother in law

Me: Can you come get your wife.

Sizwe: where is she? I've been looking for her

Me: she's in Hospital

Sizwe: what happened to her? Is she hurt? What happened?

Me: there's been an accident it's not involving her thou it's somebody else...my point is please come get her.

I dropped the call then sat down. How will I explain this to her parents. She almost got killed, I almost killed the love of my life. That sounds so crazy I feel so guilty of what I've done. But the fact that Xena cheats on me with my sister twice ! It really hits home. I've been suspecting this. How long has it went for ? How long did she cheat on me? To think I and Xena are never that cosy. A meal nicely cooked with snacks on the table, night gowns. Watching a soapie we don't really get to that but she does it with her. Sometimes I feel like she doesn't really love me as she claims. And that sucks

The doctors won't let me in to see her because I'm not her family.

Bad news is ...she's in a coma. Apparently she lost too much blood and I can't find it in my heart to forgive myself for what I have done. Oh damn Isiphile has to pay for this

BEEP

I received a message from my business platform. Oh nice news I have a new client

Bang!

Aaron Peter?

Okay so he's asking me to kill Keke Rulte that's Isiphile's fake name for her special agent job.

"Consider it done ."

It's so funny how this person is in jail, and now is making such orders. Maybe he wants to stay in prison forever. But he's asking this in my favour. I also want to kill her and I'm willing to do it for free but nah

"R 1 Million in cash. Send it through this location. 00:00 don't be late"

Killing two birds with one stone. I'm heading towards being a billionaire baby life is good!

I have a house purchased where me and my baby will move in so we live in peace. No Isiphile will be worrying her. No other girl is whatever. I know that we were made for each other and I might as well ...

Her parents walk in too worried

Victoria: where's my baby Scar?

Me: she's in the ward.

Mandran(that's her dad): what happened?

Victoria screamed out loud like she's crying that seems fake thou

Victoria: what happened?

Me: she - the doctor appears

Dr: we need her family members sir.

Victoria: what happened to my baby?(screaming)

Dr: she got shot and now we need blood samples because she lost a lot of blood

Victoria: okay I volunteer

While she goes there her dad stays behind

He looks like he doesn't really care thou

Me: how you're doing Viper?

Her dad: business has been bad, how is it your side?

Me: total opposite

Her dad: in fact I have a job for you. I'll send you the details

Me: sounds good

Her dad: tell me something. What happened to my daughter?

Me: uhm ... She got hit by a steel like it went through her stomach. I found out when I was going to see her

Her dad: ohh that's sad.

Me: are for real? Your daughter is in the coma and you act cool like a puppy got injured

Her dad: yeah it's not like I wanted to find her she was better not found or whatever.

I can't believe this old man is talking like this about his daughter I mean. That's totally weird

Her dad: eish I have to go, tell Victoria I had something urgent

SIZWE

I finally got my wife back! It's really an amazing feeling I don't know why I'm this happy. The thought of losing her had me bad

I know it's just been few months but I don't want her to be far away from me for too long. I don't want her wondering around.

I don't want her having other man beside me. I know she has never cheated or I've never seen her other than what Aya told me. I think I might be in love with her maybe it's my imagination

I opened the front seat door for her

Aya: I'm supposed to be in the front seat sweetheart.

Me: not today Aya

Aya: WHAT!

Me: get in car Ayanda dammit!!!

Once we're in the car

Isiphile: Sizwe I am so sorry for disappearing on you. It's work that caught me up

Me: really?

I close the passanger door

Aya: fine I'll seat at the back

I took the driver seat.

Me: your brother called me and told me to get you here what were you doing here?

Isiphile: he didn't tell you he shot Xena?

Me: what? !

Isiphile: go ask him.

Me: Scar loves her why would he do something like that?

Me: Ayanda make sure she doesn't move ! Are we clear?

Aya: I'm not your employee Sizwe dammit can't you see I'm pregnant?!

I jumped off went straight in the hospital ignoring her. Found Scar pacing up and down. I attacked him with fist got on top of him then beat the hell outta him

Me: how dare you try kill my sister!! How dare you !!

Blood gashes out. Nurses and other people try seperate us I continue punching him until I'm removed.

Me: where is she? I want to see my sister.

Nurse: not in this state!

I try kick him

Nurse: stop!

Me: I want to see how Xena is doing let me go!!

Nurse: give me an injection

I continued try kick him till something sharp pieces my skin. I'm out

ISIPHILE

So he thinks that this lady can actually guard me I mean she doesn't care about me.

Her phone rings

Aya: babe wam

Wait which babe?

Aya: can you come pick me up. I'm bored here

Me: who are you talking to?

Aya: none of your business. ...no babe I wasn't talking to you.

Me: I am going to the bathroom.

She busy laughing I'm not even sure she heard me. I got out walked to a nearby hotel. Honestly the only thing worrying me now is Xena's health. How she holding up ? Is she doing okay? Did she survive.

So I'll be leaving here till I decide what I wanna really do. I'm not sure whether I should go back or what.

I received a call from my dad. Yeah the one and only Lindelani Peter telling me that he has something important to tell me so tomorrow is that day

Following day 12 July

I woke up in a comfortable bed first person on my mind is Xena. Argh I swear I'm bewitched happens every day. I think it's because she's in a critical condition so that's why she popping on my mind always

I have to go and see her. I wonder how she is doing

I went to take a young shower then went back to lotion got dressed then went to check this meeting that was organised by my father

Okay I could see him sitting with this guy

I walked closer yho this Aaron Peter!

Dad: there you are!(smiling) Come here

Okay he's talking to me.

Dad: and this is your sister, Isiphile! You're excited?

Aaron: mmh

"Hello family." And that is Scar trying to act all cocky.

I give him the death stare look

Me: nyai to you too

He stares at me like he's ready to kill.

Me: what?

He then looked at Aaron smiling

Scar: hey there. I'm sure you know me but we aren't going to discuss that now. So Father why are we here again ?

Dad: to meet your other sibling. Aaron well it seems like you know each other already.

Me: I know him too. He's a rapist!!

Dad: he served his sentence so you can't crucify him forever!

Me: Four months only that's not fair all the girls he did bad on!

Dad: he didn't escape jail. He was released so please be like-

Me: you know what you are all dogs!

I called an Uber to take me to the hospital to see Xena

A few seconds it came, I got in

As soon as I closed the car door the guy locks all doors

Okay ?

Driver: everything is good this side. Got the girl sir

SCAR

Keke Rulte cancel that out of the list, one more to go

Aaron Peter he wasn't expecting to just damage my girlfriend
the leave it there. He must die too. He is currently heading to
his car while I chill with my dad

Minutes later

Got a call

Me: talk

Spike: I got the boy. All that is needed is you.

Me: I'm coming.

XENA

I try open my eyes. I can't all I can hear is people speaking

"Have you tried calling that girl she was with that time?"

"Isiphile?" That sounds like Shawn

"Yes, that's her friend. I assume, call her or find a way to get to
her"

"Why is she receiving this attention?"

"Give me that phone, I will call her myself!"

57

SCAR

I pulled the trigger

"Tluhfff" goes straight on his heart

With that he's dead.

Now It's Isiphile's time. I walk to the other side of the warehouse where they kept her

Once I get in

Isi: Fuck you Bongani!!!

Me: well fuck you too Isiphile. You think I'm gonna let you be with my wife? Firstly You're married!

Isi: I swear it is not what you think Bongani please let me out of this place!!

Me: ohhh it's not what I think! What is it then?

Tears are falling on her face she seems a mess but I don't care. She crossed the line many damn times. She's all tighed up in the chair legs arms... with a chain coz I know who I am dealing with.

Isiphile: let me go Bongani please. I won't bother you again I promise

I brushed my gun

Me: so you admit that you slept with her?

Isi: Xena was only helping me out since Sizwe is beating me, he's abusing me.

Me: you think I will believe that

I know her tricks. This person is trained to lie to endure pain to ... She's making this up I know it for a fact.

Me: That is the sweetest person I've ever met and you wanna bad mouth him!! How could you!!

Isi: I'm not lying Bongani please believe me(crying)

Me: that guy goes to church every Sunday. How can he be capable of that huh?

I brush the gun on her chin

Me: huh?

Isi: You don't know what you're talking about!

Me: easy easy

Isi: FUCK YOU !!!!

I pointed the gun on her neck

Me: say what?

Isi: no...t..hing please don't

I pretend to pull the trigger she tenses up closing her eyes. I laugh slightly I'm enjoying every minute of this. I love how scared she is.

Me: you know I'm debating whether I should kill you now or keep you here. Which one should I chose?

Isi: Ke-

Me: shhhhhhh I know exactly what to do.

I smirked

XENA

I woke up on what felt like a deep sleep trying to recall what happened. Observing my surroundings only to notice I am in a hospital. How did I get here? That's what I'm asking myself preoccupied. Around me are people

"She's awake" definitely this is Victoria. My eyes are now fully open as I noticed Shawn also on the side.

Me: where is Isiphile?

The events of what happened reply on my mind. I remember standing in front of her trying to protect her from bring shot

Victoria: I don't know. We've been trying too get hold of her too.

Me: what's he doing here?

Victoria: this is Shawn your brother sweetheart.

Me: are you sure?

Shawn: I know I'm famous which is a bit weird I'm your brother

Me: mxm

Shawn: you'll get used to it.

I never liked this dude, I wonder how we are going to work out

Victoria: let me call the doctor

Me: can you call Isiphile first. I wanna see her

Shawn: she isn't answering clearly she doesn't want you.

Me: really Shawn?

Shawn: duh!! It's so obvious

Me: you're such a dick, Victoria can you please try get her here.
I know her office is 321 in the Psychology department please
get her through.

Victoria: tried that it failed.

Me: her house?

Victoria: I don't know where that is.

Me: try something. I wanna ...

Victoria: we understand she's your friend but maybe she doesn't want to be found so just leave her.

Me: Can you at least track her location just to know she's some where safe

Shawn: Mom are you even sure this is not a random kid. She's milking us

Victoria: shut up Shawn. Can you stop talking!

Me: (to Victoria) at least there's something we agree on.

58

"Please don't kill me Twin, I am your blood, your twin please don't do this to me."

I begged him as he had a gun pointed in my forehead

Please!!!! I beg you oh yini Mntase

I felt the gun moving away as tears rolled down my cheeks. I know that I've done him bad in the past but that doesn't mean he should kill me over a girl! If he is hurt this way then why don't he just break things off with her? I don't get it. But I won't say that to him

He got me tied up more then dragged me to a boot. It's dark and dusty in here. Only God knows where he is taking now

After a long ride the car stops then he took me out

Scar: you said you don't want me to kill you so I'm leaving you here so you will be killed. I have to admit that I couldn't find it in my heart to kill you because you're my sister but instead of me doing the job.

He looks around.

We're in a dark forest it's night time. Owls are making weird sounds I'm scared as fuck! Crickets ...hissing sounds ...zombies who knows what's here.

Scar: I'm gonna let the wild animals do their job.

He dropped me on the ground tied tightly in ropes. My legs and arms all tied up.

He then drove off leaving there

Siiii.... I could hear a snake hissing

Me: HELP!!!!

Siiii

Me: SOMEBODY HELP ME!!!

There's literally no one here

"Is somebody there?" Wait is that a person?

XENA

I am now laying staring at the ceiling. Visiting hours are over so mama will come tomorrow. I think I am starting to kinda like her thing is people are different and it takes some time and observation to get to tell if you like them or not. My other mother...well I don't think she knows about what happened. I still care about her a lot even thou we haven't made contact of anything like that happened. I'm still trying to figure out this

new family thing and in few days it's vacation I'm still not sure where I wanna go yet so yeah pretty much that's it.

I gotta go to the bathroom I know they said I should wait for the doctor. I tried to move my legs. They don't move ...okay maybe I didn't push the- I can't feel my legs ... I tried one more time. No this can not be happening I can't move my legs!!!

Me: NURSE!!!! NURSE!!!!

No this is not happening maybe it's a dream of something.

A nurse rushes in

Me: My legs!! What is happening? I can't feel my legs!!

A doctor comes in

Nurse: calm down Miss Mlanjana. Please calm down

Me: Calm down for what!!!

Doctor: Miss please don't stress!!

Me: can you freaken tell me what is happening to me!!

Doctor: I know this is hard but it happens that the bullet went through past one of the bones in your spinal cord which caused you to be paralysed.

Me: That's a lie.

Doctor: I am sorry Miss I know that it's hard to accept but that's the hard truth.

Me: where's my family?

Doctor: I told them separately. Please understand that-

Me: tell me I am dreaming. No ways no no no

Tears rolled on my cheeks thinking that I

Doctor: you will have to use a wheelchair for the rest of your life. Don't worry it's not like life is over

Me: yes!! My life is over now GET OUT!! Get the fuck out I don't care if you're a doctor or what get the fuck out

A took a vase threw it on him he ducked "crash" it hit the wall.

I let out the scream of frustration and agony I cannot believe what just happened. I hit my legs pinching them I feel nothing. Oh my goodness my life is so over. Thinking that I will never be able to walk with my own two feet again. I will never be able to play the piano. I loved that Instrument so much. I can't believe that my music career ended before it even started. This means I won't ever be able to kick a ball. I won't be able to walk to the mall. I won't be able to drive myself when I have a car. I won't be able to cross my leg over another I won't be able to walk to parks, to clubs, to take a taxi

to walk to class. I will be using a wheelchair!!! Even the sound of that is making me cry. It's my fault though I took a bullet for her. I was only doing for a greater good. To save her. After I did all of that for her she doesn't even pitch up to see me. The first person I thought of when I woke up was my Rato guess what? She doesn't even care about me.

As for Scar. I knew he was cruel and brutal but not to the point of killing his own sister!!!

Right now I have mixed feelings. I don't want anything that spells Scar next to me.

.

.

.

.

1 week later

.

.

1 July 2016

I heard a knock on my bedroom door. I closed the magazine I was reading

Me: come in

Victoria walks in with a tray with breakfast.

Victoria: good morning honey.

Me: morning

I lazily smiled.

So yeah I stay with her now ever since the day I got discharged. I couldn't stay alone in my apartment since I won't be able to do a lot of things alone

Victoria: how did you sleep?

Me: good

Victoria: honey

She sat on the bed took my hand

Victoria: I understand that this affects you. If you wanna talk I am here okay.

Me: I'm fine (I fake smiled) I'm coping.

Victoria: it's good to hear that honey.

She kissed my cheek

Victoria: I gotta go to work now. I'm getting late

I smiled "okay, safe travel" I said.

She kissed my forehead then left

My nurse usually comes at 08:00 she does everything for me and that's so embarrassing. I can't even take myself to the toilet, I can't go upstairs. I can't do a lot of things I'm always stuck in my room 24/7 it's frustrating but it's not like I have control over that.

It's now around 12:00 pm I was in the middle of a movie when Shawn let's himself in my room.

Me: what do you want punk?!

Shawn: Your annoying boyfriend is here again(rolling his eyes) I know you don't want to talk to him I was letting you know.

Me: let him in.

Shawn: are you sure? You always be shutting him down. What happened today? Me: seriously?

Shawn: I'm asking out of curiosity nothing personal.

Me: something is personal. What do you mean "nothing personal" get out of my room Shawn.

Shawn: how did you become his girlfriend I mean look at the guy. He's scary as FUCK!!! Me: (warning tone) Shawnnnn

Shawn: I was just wondering.

He disappeared then minutes later Scar enters. I'm nervous as hell this is gonna be the first time I'm talking to him in a week and a half.

Shawn: shout if you need any help. I'll be standing next to the door.

Me: No go somewhere else, you wanna be eaveslapping us now huh? "Are you ready kids !

Ay ay Captain!!-" that's his phone ringing. He closes the door and I am left with the one and only Scar

I dart my eyes around, shifting my ass on the wheelchair coz I've been sitting on since morning. Four straight hours to be exact Me: so what exactly do you want?

Scar: I came to get my girlfriend back.

Me: you must be horny if you think I am gonna get back with you.

Scar: Xena I know I messed up and I know by the end of today I am gonna have you in my arms. I promise you that

59

In my mind I'm like this dude is persistent as fuck like how is he gonna do that? How exactly.

Me: get your horny ass out of here ...I really thought you came to say something better than that huh I guess I was wrong.

Scar: i know you're hurting baby. I know I put you in that chair but remember it wasn't my fault you jumped in front of her. That bullet wasn't meant for you it was meant for her

Me: I know but the fact that you wanted to kill her Scar

I looked at him in disappointment

Scar: you know I kill people you know that and we talked about it. You were cool with it now what the problem? What's the problem?

Me: the problem is you killing Her you know that is Isiphile. You know it for a fact!!! You know it for a fact Bongani

Scar: I know that she's your ex too. I know that it's the same person you cheated me with. I know she's the same person who brought sadness in my life for a long time. I know she's the person who stole my girl. Which is You. I love you Xena I don't wanna be sharing you with anyone I don't do open relationship or whatever you call it. You are my girl and you hurt me by messing with her

Me: it was then!! This time around she was seeking for help. Sizwe has ... He has been physically abusing her and I was there for comfort.

Scar: did he really do that?

Me: yea he did. He literally did

Scar: did you see him do it?

Me: no but that's not the point.

Scar: okay I get it. That's what she told me too. My question is why did you guys look like you were cuddling? Why was she AT your apartment Xena?

Me: she had nowhere else to go what do you mean? If she went back there then-

Scar: "she had nowhere else to go" that's what you're saying?

Me: I mean-

Scar: can you remind me why you didn't want to see me again.

Me: because I-

Scar: you're afraid of the truth. You took Isiphile in your apartment without telling me. You were busy cuddling doing some shit I don't know

having sex with her AGAIN.

Me: I didn't cheat on you Scar!!

Scar: you took her side always. Xena you realise you're Bisexual right and having her overnight ...plus she's a girl.. regardless of whatever happened you know I hate it when you're with her. You know I hate it when you're alone together. Any shit can happen but nah you chose that you will go against what I prefer and do what you want. Xena Kabelo Mlanjana Daniels I love you and you know it.

Me: I think at this point we can just call this relationship off. It's not working out.

Scar: oh no sweetheart we're not breaking up and don't worry about Isiphile. She won't bother us again

Me: what do you mean?

Scar: I've put her in her place

My heart starts thinking horrible things. Please don't tell me he killed her. How will I live knowing that she doesn't exist anymore. Her existence is more important than mine especially now. Not hearing from her has been enough. Please let it not be what I think it is.

Me: did you kill her?

Scar: she moved to Cape Town.

Phew at least. I thought I risked my life for nothing. Just imagine how worthless I'd feel if she was dead. Being in a wheelchair for nothing just imagine. I already feel horrible but hearing she is gone would make me consider suicide like literally

Scar: It's for the best. At least she now respects the boundaries she won't be bothering us anymore. We will be a happy couple t-

Me: I said it's over Scar didn't you hear that?

Scar: You're not breaking up with me Xena. You are definitely not going to break up with me.

Me: I just did

I'm like pshh what does he mean. Couples break up everyday what's so special about him?

Scar: when you were in need I was there. Remember when your mom kicked you out? Remember when you had no money to fly back? Remember when you had no house to live in? Remember when you had no money for fees I was there and you wanna drop me like this? This is how you gonna treat me?

—

I feel so guilty. It's like I'm taking advantage of him or something. He really did take care of me

Scar: I bought the food you ate I bought toiletries I did everything for you and I know I am a good boyfriend. You're not about to dump me now. What's even the reason for this Break up huh?

Me: Its not you. It's me

Scar: make me understand babe

Me: There is no sparks. I don't know I feel like something is missing. It's just not working out ..there are more reasons.

Scar: like what?

Me: I'm not the girl for you Scar plus I'm in a wheelchair

Scar: being in a wheelchair doesnt mean I'll love you any less. You'll always be the Xena I feel in love with I'm not giving up on you Xena. I love you so much to let you go. We've been together for over four months now and I can't lose you. Don't think any less of yourself now that you're in this chair I really love you for you

He kissed my forehead. He can be so cute ...oh my gosh. Thinking this is the longest relationship I've ever been in

He took out a ring

No way!!

Scar: give me your fingers

Me: Bongani I can't accept this

Scar: you deserve it. This is a promise ring.

He slipped it in on my finger kissed my hand.

Scar: I love you Xena don't ever doubt that

He took out a box then gave me.

Me: what is this?

Scar: open it.

I took it then opened it. It had a key

Scar: I bought a new house and I'd love it if you'd move in with me.

This is too much is he for real. I feel like screaming! I'm shocked, suprised and flabbergasted. I can't believe all of this is happening in one day. At this point I'm so flattered. I'm happy the way my mood changed is unexplainable. I stared at my ring.

Me: You're so romantic Scar (blushing)

Scar: is it a yes? Me: umm....

Scar: babe Me: can I think about it?

Scar: I know you love me enough to say yes. I can see it in your eyes

I blushed. He can really see it in my eyes.

Scar: just say yes already.

Me: Yes Scar I'll move in with you.

Scar: you have no idea how happy I am. I promise I'll love you Xena. I'll love you sooo good. I'll take care of you. I'll do anything just for you. I promise you the universe... I will provide and protect you always imma make sure you're always happy. Well go on dates ohh baby I'm so happy were together again. I know we will work out just give us a chance. We were meant to be. You know it and I know it too

He attacks me with a kiss. It's really weird know that I'm in this chair coz of the distance but I go with the flow as he deepens it. Brushing my neck with his hand then he moves to my neck laying wet kisses on my neck Me: ahh!!!

Scar: yes baby

He pressed my boobs. Brushing them making traces on my back Me: mmmh

He sucks my skin leaving a love bite pulls out

Scar: I love you

I sucked in some air

Me: I love you too Bongani

60

We packed my clothes. The dude had everything in order my clothes were taken to his car when he wheeled me out of the room Shawn was at the door

Me: what stupid?

Shawn: You are the one who is stupid. Where are you going with all these clothes?

Scar: she's moving in with me.

He kissed my cheek

Scar: right babe

Me: yeah. Shawn I'm moving out of this house. I'll live with him now as you heard.

Shawn: why? Isn't he the same guy who shot you?

Me: yeah but that doesn't mean he meant to shot me. Shawn I think that's enough now can you move out of the way

Shawn: Just like that?

Me: just like what?

Shawn: I know we don't get along but I think you're making a big mistake.

Me: fuck off Man get out of the way.

Shawn: mom will not agree with this

Me: Whatever

Shawn: Xena

Scar: you heard her bro

Shawn: you'll get in trouble

Me: I'm 18 ... Which means I'm an adult. Buzz off Man

With that being said Scar wheeled me to the car. Helped me sit in properly then drove off

We arrived at this beautiful Mansion.

Me: it's big

Scar: you love it?

Me: yeah. Why did you buy such a big house

Scar: for our kids to run around (touching my belly) I'll definitely score 6 children on this stomach

Me: oh

I don't really want so many children. One kid is good for me

Me: um that's too much and plus we aren't married yet I believe in having kids in a marriage.

Scar: I can make that happen.

Me: huh?

Scar: I know well definitely get married soon.

Me: (shocked) soon?

Scar: yep

Me: I'm 18 we haven't been together for too long what's the rush?

He smiled

Scar: I'm joking babe

He caressed my cheeks smiling

Scar: we're still young. I totally agree with you. You got cute cheeks by the way

I blushed

Me: thanks (then he kissed them)

Scar: I love you

Me: I love you too

He pecked my lips tightened the grip on my hand then kissed it.
The gate opened then he drove in

Advertisement

one hand on the steering. I stared at his masculinity his muscles are popping like as he drives they kinda move too then tattoos flows on his arm. They must be new coz I never really saw these. It's a GUN tattoo design and a heart.

Pretty cool

We got in there, a girl around 23 wearing maid clothes appears

Girl: good evening sir

Scar: Take the clothes in the boot.

He said with a straight serious face

Girl: yes sir

The girl went to the garage. I'm so afraid of asking her name even I wonder. She's cute shame like the innocent tyga girls.

He wheeled me to a master bedroom

Scar: this is our room

Me: it's beautiful babe.

Scar: I know hey

Me: this bed is huge too is it a Queen bed?

Scar: King Bed. I wanna make sure we have even space for when we do the deed (clears throat)

I smirk

Scar: you know

He rests his hand on my shoulder then his hands slowly unbuttoned my shirt.

We hear a knock at the door

Scar: shit!

I made a goofy laugh

Scar: whose it?

"It's Buhle." Oh that voice is so cute and innocent

He went to open and there stands Buhle (Maid) with my suitcases

She stared at me then looked away when I catch her. I bite my lower lip smirking it's just something I like doing ...okay I'm not guilty. I really won't be explaining myself.

Scar took the cases then slapped the door on her face with even saying thank you.

Me: that was rude.

Scar: what was rude?

Me: I mean you just slabbed a door at Buhle. How would you feel if that was done to you?

Scar: you like taking things personal Xena.

Me: at least a thank you.

Scar: I don't owe her that what's wrong with you. I don't roll like that unless you're my girlfriend or wife or family then I would say thank you.

Me: oh okay then

We unpacked the clothes in silence then later we went to eat dinner.

Scar: (clears throat) uhm Xena this will be the person who is gonna be taking care of you when I'm gone. Don't worry there are cameras in the house so you'll always be protected all the time sweetheart

I nod

We proceeded eating

After dinner he announced that he has a business meeting nton nton so on the first night he's leaving me huh? Okay cool. He

put me in bed. Put water by my side everything I would need is near me.

Scar: if you need to go to the bathroom just call Buhle.

Me: were exacty are you going ?

Scar: we have a heist today. Mandla and Fred are waiting for me in the warehouse right now.

Me: Oh I miss those guys so much.

Scar: I'll invite them over tomorrow don't worry.

Me: thanks babe. When are you gonna come back thou?

Scar: I'm not sure maybe at 04:00

Me: okay

He pecked my lips

Scar: I love you Xena

Me: I love you too Isiphile...oh Scar

Scar: what did you just call me?

His phone rang.

Me: your phone is ringing.

Scar: let it ring. What did you just call me

It rings none stop and now he's frustrated he furiously answers then storms out without saying a word to me. It was a slip of a tongue I didn't mean to

I lay on the bed with thoughts till I doze off. When I opened my eyes Buhle is standing in front of me staring at me. It's still dark honestly I am taken aback

Me: what do you want here?

Buhle: I came to check up on you.

Me: I'm fine now go.

She stands up I notice that she's wearing very short nightie. All her tighies are out. She has a beautiful body I must say

Buhle: what did Scar ever see in you? You're in a wheelchair. Look at you?

Me: Get the fuck out

She pushes her butt out then walks to the door.

Damn! What in the heavens

61

I waited for Scar to come back since he said he'll back 04:00. I kept staring at the clock it went pass 04:00 to five to six to seven. I'm starting to get worried now. I called him it's ringing but he isn't answering the phone. Gosh what the fuck I called 10 more times still he isn't answering it's now 08:00 am and I'm hungry hungry. I want to pee so I called Buhle she's supposed to the work moss.

She didn't answer okay I wheeled myself out of the bedroom knocked on her room

"Mmh whose it?"

Me: Please wake up I wanna take a bath

Buhle: take a bath then

Me: I need you to help me

Buhle: I'm still sleeping can't lady get their beauty sleep?

Me: it's your job

She snored loudly she's not sleeping why is she acting?

Disappointed I wheeled myself back. I really don't want to be arguing with anyone what I know when Scar comes back she'll have go.

I went to the bathroom ...the urge to pee is too much now

I tried to balance myself by the bath holding washing basket just when I was about to take a seat I slipped and fell

Urine involuntary went out

Shit!

Me: Buhle!!

Silence

Me: Buhle!!!

Silence

oh my goodness I can't stand up and I've messed myself my phone is at the headboard.

I sat on my urine for something close to an hour until Scar came back once he steps in the bathroom he's shocked

Scar: oh my goodness what happened?

Me: where were you?

He picked me up

Scar: tell me what happened.

Me: your maid doesn't wanna do anything around here. She's sleeping when I went to her room she's like "I want my beauty sleep" can you believe that?

Scar: are you sure Buhle said that?

Me: and where were you? I called you more than 10 times you weren't answering your phone.

Scar: we got caught up... Went for a few drinks after.

Me: so you wanna tell me that you went out after the job without thinking about me? You didn't think about me Scar?

Scar: the guys wanted to go grab some drinks ba-

Me: so they are more important than me?

Scar: No babe I mean I was already the-

Me: I waited for you Scar...this maid of yours being all weird can you believe she acted as if she was asleep while I try to get myself in the bathroom

Tears rolled in my eyes. Being on this chair is pain ...I can't even do simple things! Going to the bathroom should be simple. Getting your pants down and sitting on the toilet seat. That's simple but I can't do that.

Scar: I'll get a new maid baby she'll pay for what she did.

Me: are you gonna kill her?

Scar: Don't worry about what I'll do babe. Just don't worry about that

He wiped my tears

Scar: I'm sorry for staying till late I'm really sorry for that okay. I promise I'll make it up to you

He brushed a tear that just fell

I can't bring myself to talk about how I actually feel when I'm this close to him. That's something I should be able to talk about but I can't maybe I will as time goes I will be able to talk to him

Scar: I'm deeply sorry babe ... You're making me cry too

He pouted revealing dimples. His so cute right now. I smiled it's just something about him that makes me kinda of ... Let stop thinking coz it doesn't matter

He ran a bath for me then picked me up. Put me on the water then washed me. Took me out with bridal style then lotioned my body and took one of his Tshit

Me: you can take my clothes why are dressing me up in your T-shirt

Scar: it's my favourite. I want you to have it

Me: aww babe you don't have too.

Scar: take it as a gift since I stood you up.

Me: okay then thanks

Scar: no worries

He put me on his sweaters

Scary: I'll go make something to eat for you okay ?

Me: okay

Scar: I love you

Me: Same

He looked at me weirdly

Scar: you're not gonna say you love me back?

Me: Me too. I feel the same Scar. You want me to say that?

He squated next my chair

Advertisement

looked at me in the eye

Scar: when should I expect you to love me wholeheartedly?

Me: I love you. What do you mean?

Scar: just yesterday you called me(took a breath) Isiphile.
You said you loved her

Me: It was a slip of a tongue babe. I love you. It's only you

Scar: slip of a tongue huh?

Me: yeah babe I promise in my mind I was saying Scar ... All the
time it's you I think about. Serious babe

Scar: mmh

He stared at me for sometime

Me: serious babe

Scar: Okay but you have to promise me you'll never say that again

Me: Never ever again (crossing my fingers)

I smiled at him

Me: can I get a kiss? (Shyly)

He bite his lip then leaned in gave a soft peck then pulled out

Me: I love you

Scar: I love you too

His eyes be sparkling like I can see it in his eyes that he's really in love.

Scar: Alright I have to go make the food then fire this maid too ohh before I forget

He takes something on his pocket. BMW key

Scar: take this, it's yours?

Me: you bought me a car?(confused)

Scar: yeah aren't you excited?

Me: how am I going to drive it?

Scar: I've got you a driver so you can drive anywhere you want.

Me: you didn't have to thou.

Scar: Is it wrong to spoil umuntu wami?

I blushed

Me: No .. thanks though (smiled)

Scar: one more thing prepare yourself to go out today. We're going on a date... I've booked restaurant and it's reserved for only us

He smiled revealing his dimples

VICTORIA

A day ago when I came back from work I heard some news that Xena moved out to her boyfriend's house and when I called her she's like nah they got back together which is pretty weird for me. Why would she want to move in with someone else while she has her own home. Someone who made her paralysed. On the other side I'm like she's 18 years old and I should let her make her decisions. I believe that as people we should let our kids learn it the tough way. If that's what she wants then it's fine. I know that this may not end well and I want her to learn from her mistakes as well if it's like that definitely she's gonna be a stronger and wiser person than she is now.

XENA

.
.br/>.

Everything has been going smoothly I can't complain. Scar has hired this nurse, she's in her 40s and a very funny person. I really enjoy her company shame. Me and Scar ...We've been having dates every week usually late at night sometimes we'd go to the park but that was once since I didn't really like the

stares. I really don't like being out there you know...going outside is a struggle.

Schools are opened I've been missing classes and...as weird as this may sound I hav-

Someday this happened

Scar: Babe why don't you just drop out?

Me: What?

Scar: you say your main thing was playing the piano right? And playing the piano requires you to use your feet. Basically you won't be able to play

As hard as it may sound. Yes I can't play the piano now

Me: but drop out?

Scar: I'll take care of you baby. I've got your back all the time. I promise you won't suffer when I am here

Me: this is a tough decision to make

Scar: Think about. You can't even face going outside so going to school might be trouble some as well...come on babe. In fact this doesn't even need any thinking. What's even the use of studying when I can provide for you?

Me: but-

Scar: no buts Xena. I know what I'm talking about. I can take care of you like serious

Me: Umm-

Scar: You agree with me right? I know I'm right. You have no idea how happy I would be if you would listen to me just this once

Me: okay I guess. I'll drop out

Scar: Great. I'll make it happen. So what do you want me to get you?

Me: um anything (shyly)

Scar: come on say something (smiling)

Me: Sweets.

He kissed my cheek multiple times

Scar: Okay baby. I gotta run now I have a lot of work to do

I fake smiled as he went out

I feel so stupid for even to agree with that but he makes kinda sense I guess. ArghI'm so sad.

I wheeled myself to the balcony. Scar bought me this cool wheelchair that can climb up the stairs. It's really nice shame

I went up the balcony and stared at the sunset. This is my daily routine

Advertisement

I love sunsets. There's a thing about them

I sat there thinking of my life in general

.

.

.

2 months later.

Everything has been going not so good lately. Scar has been coming back later than usual but he says it's work. I understand ...or at least I should understand.

Today he is working from home and has put a no entry sign at his door. He's really working hard shame. When he comes to bed he's always tired and drowsy and has eye bags. I used to get eye bags when I looked at the computer screen for too long...or when I've been concentrating and working too much that day. So I totally understand that sometimes I wish I could give him a massage but that would be tricky so I just let it be.

I wheeled myself to his office just to check up on him

When I was about to open

"I told you to never set your feet here again"

"I've been waiting for the allowance for this month. What do you think our son will eat?"

"I forgot to send it Buhle. That's it, do you think I'd do that to my son?"

"You tell me. That's OUR son don't say your SON!"

"Keep it down someone might hear you."

I'm by the door. Not believing my ears, debating whether I should open the door now or wait. I wanna know what will happen next They are talking silently now.

After a minute

"Xena is in the house Buhle don't do this "

"You know we love each other Bongs we've dated for 4 years"

"That was high school! Those high school years are over just accept it man. "

There's silence for like two minutes. Tears are already steaming down my cheeks. I don't know whether I should get in or walk away I hear kissing sound

TF! I pushed the door and saw Scar right on top of her

63

The look on his face is priceless as he quickly got off her.

Scar: I can explain

Me: I've seen enough you don't have to be explaining yourself.

I wheeled myself off to our bedroom opened the closet then packed my things. Scar gets in while I'm in that process

Scar: Baby

Me: Don't baby me!

Scar: She seduced me I swear she did.

Me: And you fell for it!! You fell for it!

A tear rolls down my cheek.

Scar: it's not like that.

His face was now red

he looked frustrated and losing his cool

Scar: It was a mistake. It will never happen

Me: Bongani Peter you and I are over.

He sighed in defeat looking hopeless while I pack my clothes.

He sits there watching at me. I thought he was gonna beg me more like tf!

When I put my last piece of clothing

Scar: People forget easily huh?

Me: shut the fuck up Scar!

Scar: When I met you. You were so lovely, brave and fiece girl. I fell for you

He wipes his tears. Aw he's crying.

Scar: I loved you but you decided to cheat with my one and only sister! My sister Xena! My own bloody sister! Guess what I did? I forgave you only because I love you. I found you two together. Again! Doing God knows what but today you can't forgive me for a simple mistake ?

I feel so bad and guilty

—

Scar: You can't forgive me for this but I forgave you multiple times. Yes I agree I have a child with her. I was scared to tell you Xena. I was afraid you would leave me. (More tears fell on his face) Growing upmy life was hard. I've been broken beyond compare but when you came into my life Xena... everything changed. When I was 14 years old I met Buhle and we got together. We were in love back then and she betrayed me more than anyone can. She started to change and it happened that all along she was pregnant with my baby she

changed a lot. Started demanding money from me bare in mind I was poor back then... Calling me names....and hitting me. I know you may not believe me because guys can't be abused right? It's only woman who are taken seriously. It got to an extent where I almost lost my eye ... I reported the issue and she was jailed got out after a year and then. That was the end of us until she came here in Joburg to look for a job. Because I'm not that kind of person who holds grudges I gave her the maid job. I really don't know what got to me by doing what I did Xena. She's a wolf covered in a lambs wool.

Please forgive me baby please

He hugged me crying on my shoulder

Scar: I never meant to hurt you Xena. All the people that I love seem to leave me. Please don't leave me Xena... promise you won't leave me. Promise me

I took a deep breath

Me: I won't leave you

Scar: Thank you so much

I brushed his back patting it as he calms down.

2 days later

.
. .
. .
. .

" Babe hurry up" said Scar as we are having a house warming party. I don't understand why we are doing this now. It's been over 3 months of us living here. Mandla and Fred hopefully will be here

I wheeled myself downstairs. A crowd of people are in the dance floor. Music booming to the top.

Most of the people here are the ones from the gang. I kinda feel comfortable some how now.

Scar came by my side then kissed my cheek.

Scar: you look amazing

I blushed

Me: Thank you babe

Scar: you want drink?

Me: No thanks.

He hit his wine glass grabbing people's attention.

Scar: ehhh I'd like to thank everyone who made it today. Including my beautiful girlfriend that I love very much It really means a lot that you guys pulled through and eh...there's something special I'd like to say today that will definitely change the rest of my life.

He looked at me.

Scar: Babe you know I love you and I would do anything for you. You have been a blessing to my life and I know that the stars were written for us. I've known you for 7 months now and I know you are the one.

He kneeled down

Scar: Xena Kabelo Mlanjana will you marry me?

I raised my eyes to the entrance and there stands Isiphile Peter

Chapter 63 continued

ISIPHILE

I had a police force Sonu can make sure that Scar is arrested. He tried to kill me and I want to be the one that does that. I wanna see the look on his face when I do it. The disappointment. I'm sure y'all wondering where I have been for all this time. Well that's a story for another day. When I was at the entrance, I noticed that Scar is proposing. Xena lifted her eyes up then we made eye contact...just when we were going to come in she speaks something quite unexpected. Because I wanna hear I delayed the arrest so I can listen

XENA

Me: Before I respond to your question I would really like to say this first. Thank you.

I am really great ful for what you have done for me. The surprises you always give me. It's always unexpected like how this is unexpected. You loved me to bits no matter how bad I did. You forgave me for multiple things yes I agree. You gave me your whole heart...you gave me the world you promised. You made me feel like I am living in our own universe. You always made sure is am taken care of. You're sweet

Advertisement

loving and kind. Oh how can I forget understanding. You have all those qualities Bongani and I really appreciate the Lord for taking his time in making you. A charming Romantic boyfriend like you. I'm blessed to call you my boyfriend and I think some girls really envy me (slightly chuckled). Any girl who would be married to you would really be lucky....for the past few days I've been analysing my feelings for you and thinking of how much I love you. I don't really think that I can agree to this proposal. It's a No.

I think I was misinterpreting the excitement of having a boyfriend to being in love. The delight of receiving gifts from you with love. You can't buy love and I am really sad to say that I have never loved you Scar...maybe it was lust and I don't know. Isiphile walked in with a police force. Looking sexy as ever in that black outfit and blonde hair.

She went straight to Scar

Isi: Bongani Peter, You are under arrest for 2 attempt murder cases. You have the right to remain quiet. Everything you say may be used against you in court.

People are now taking photos and videos. Screaming

64

After Scar is arrested I went to the balcony. Watching the sunset. It feels like the world is coming to an end. I feel so empty and broken.

I never thought that this would be me.

I felt someone touching my shoulder. By the scent I could tell that it's Isiphile.

Isi: Hey

Me: Hi

The atmosphere is calm and quiet like we're in a funeral. She stands by the balcony also watching the sunset. We stay like that for minutes

Me: How are you?

Isi: Never been this better.

Me: I heard you were in Cape Town

Isi: Cape Town?

Me: After I saved your life you left me. Just like that like nothing ever happened!!

Isi: I didn't leave you by choice!!

Me: Then tell me WHY your fat cute ass was in Cape Town dammit!

Isi: who said I was in Cape Town? Who lied to you?!!

Me: that's what Scar told me.

Isi: Well for your information Your Scar left me in the woods. The bastard kidnapped me and left me in the wild.

Me: Are we still talking about Scar?

Isi: Yes X.

It's been a long time since someone called me X and it's so nice to hear that nickname again.

Me: I never thought that he was that cruel.

Isi: Me neither.

Me: How did you get here then?

Isi: A woman found me lucky enough and then I eventually got help and moved to Rustenberg just to lay low. Now I have come back. I still have to face Steve. He's one piece of a headache.

Me: Wow you were lucky enough ...I really don't get why he would lie Bout... That

The thought of her being eaten by wild animals makes me shiver.

Me: Basically he tried to ...I can't even say it. You know he really crossed the line by touching you ... twice! I'll teach him a lesson don't worry.

Isi: Not with your gangsterism ways.

Me: Shut up. I know what I'll do

Isi: No X. I won't let you go back to those old ways. Xena I love you so much to the extent that in my eyes you're an angel.

Me: Okay I won't be doing anything drastic then

Isi: Thank you.

She hugged me.

Isi: You've been so good to me. You got in this chair for me ...you did everything to make sure I am taken off.

Me: but we're not going back together.

Isi: Why?

Me: Isiphile I love you. I really do and I'm pretty sure that I was made for you. And you were made for me.

I take her hand and put it on my heart.

Me: you hear how much it's beating?

Isi: Yeah

Me: My heart never beats this fast unless you are close to me.

Isi: Then why don't you want us to be together. You love me and I love you.

Me: I think we both need space from each other and go through our emotions first. You'll be going through a divorce...that will be emotionally draining. I am not emotionally available right now. My mind is all over the place. My view of love changed and I think it's fair enough that we enter into a healthy relationship where we know that we will be fully committed and be with each fully. I'm not sure if I'm making sense.

Isi: How old are you?

Me: 18

Isi: You're so matured for your age.

I blushed

Me: Thanks for the compliment.

No one ever have me such a contractive compliment like this.

Isi: It makes you more attractive futhi. So what are we now ?

Me: Friends for now.

I stared at her lips

Isi: will we talk everyday?

Me: yeah

I licked my lips.

Isi: stop doing that

she blushed

Me: What?

I licked my lips again

Advertisement

she blushed putting hands on her face.

Isi: Oh my God

Me: Rato ...Rato came here. Don't move your head...gosh it's so big. It's in your hair

Isi: What is it?

Me: Come sit here I'll remove it.

She is now freaking out then sat on my lap

Me: It's here

I brushed her neck looking at her lips then pulled her for a kiss.

Mmmh I missed these lips so much. I can feel the passion growing. As our lips are locked with each other.The warm

vibrance she brings. I feel the love and an emotion of delight I brush her back stroking her hair slightly.

Isi: mmh

I pulled out. Staring at her eyes. They are so small and sexy.

Me: You look cute

Isi: stop playing with me X.

I slid my hand between her thighs brushing her slowly.

Isi: We're outside X stop. Me: No one will see us. It's dark

Isi: you're crazy X

I pushed my hand further between her thighs. She gasped for air then let out a moan. I brushed her nunu.

Isi: oh X (that came out as a whisper)

I chuckled coz now she has her head buried in my shoulder.

Me: Okay I'll stop. Isi: don't stop.

Me: We are outside. As you said. Plus I need to get out of here. Now Get off me. Isi: So you'll leave me hanging?

Me: The day I'll be able to walk again...that's when we'll finish it off.

Isi: That's so unfair

65

After all that lovey dovey moment we had to part ways. For me I think I'm going back to my parents House. When I say my parents house I mean back at home. My home home

Honestly I feel like I have to go somewhere where there's different energy and where I can finally breathe with no pressure. I took a plane there...with the help of my mother.

Victoria

Before I left

Victoria: Xena.

Me: Mom

Victoria: I am proud of you. I'm proud of the woman you have become and being this strong brave person you are. Vathiswa raised you well indeed. I know you have made bad choice such as dropping out of school but I hope you have learnt something from that. Do not learn to depend or listen to everything people say. You know we are always here as your family. We always there to support you throughout okay. Come here

She hugged me

Victoria: I love you.

Me: I love you too. Thanks for letting me learn the hard way.

I looked at Shawn

Me: Thanks to you too.

Shawn: I know I'm an expert you don't have to thank me.

Me: Will you ever get off that high horse?

Shawn: No!

Me: I can tell (he laughed, I joined him) honestly as annoying as you can be. I love you

He melts then held his chest

Shawn: That's so sweet. I know everyone loves me.

Me: Mxm

He cracked out in laughter

Shawn: I love you two little sister.

He hugged me

With that being said... I flew off to Durban.

Basically my thing is...I want to spend sometime thinking about how I'll go about my life. What are the steps I'll take from now forward. What do I want to do. Something career wise and I wanna do that in a space where I know there is no distractions. I've told Isiphile about this. Yes she's not happy with the

distance that we away from which other with. It's for the best. I think

3 months later

.
. .
. .
. .

Early in the morning I received a call from Isiphile.

I rolled to the side for my phone

Me: Hey you.

Isi: happy birthday to you (singing) happy birthday to you.
Happy birthday dear Xena ... happy birthday to you! Hip hip hooray!!!!!!

Me: Oh Thank you

Isi: Happy birthday chommie I wish you all the best in life and please stay sweet and cute for me.

I chuckled

Me: of course I will.

Isi: are you excited that you're finally 19 years old?.

Me: No.

Isi: Haaaa

Me: There's nothing special about growing old. I mean who would get excited about being closer to getting wrinkles and hurting waist, hurting bones. Come on

Isi: Me.

Me: Serious?

Isi: Serious

Advertisement

I wanna live for a long ass time.

Me: Too bad

She chuckled

Isi: Anyways I have a suprise for you.

Me: really?

Isi: I'm coming to see you! I took a leave just for me to be there with you.

Me: That's so cute. I can't wait to see you, Ive been wanting to see you. I miss you so much

Isi: I miss you too. This break is nerve wrecking I just can't deal with it anymore. I wanna be by your side all the time.

Me: Right? ...I thought I was alone. I can't wait to see you. And be with you! How are you doing ... sorry for asking late. How's everything going that side.

Isi: Finally after three months he sighed the divorce papers.

ISIPHILE

Flashback

[3 months ago]

I walked in the house I previously called my own. Found Sizwe cooking and Ayanda watching TV

He was surprised to see me.

Sizwe: oh my baby is back.

Me: Who is your babe?

Sizwe: Come on you know we are married.

I put the divorce papers on the table and gave him a pen.

Me: Can you sign this for me.

Sizwe: what is this?

Me: divorce papers. Please sign

Sizwe: I'm not doing that.

Ayanda: Sizwe hurry up with the cooking I am hungry.

Sizwe: I'm trying Ayanda!

I laughed

Me: This feels so good. Now she's bossing you around?.

Sizwe: No she's not.

Me: Oh skrrr sign the papers then

Sizwe: Leave them here. I'll sign them when I'm done

[End of flashback]

I've been waiting since then and it's only now that he finally had the courage to do so.

I'm currently landing at Durban and after three more days I'll be back for court.

We haven't told Vathiswa about us, Me and Xena that is and today we will also be breaking those news to her. I don't know how she will take it when she hears I am now officially with her daughter.

I called Xena

XENA

My phone rang. I went to answer. Mmh I'm really not feeling that we'll today. I feel dizzy.

Isi: I'm at the airport.

Me: I'll send a driver to come pick you u-

I wheeled myself to the bathroom then vomited. I vomited again

66

Okay this better be a dream or something co if I'm really ...no I can't be pregnant. I drank the pill that day and I've been using protection all along. How will Isi deal with this when ...no I think it's something I ate or something.

I cleaned myself up then I asked the maid to go buy me a pregnancy test so I know.

25 minutes later Isiphile finally made it home. I wheeled myself to the car so excited of meeting her She ran to me and hugged me.

Automatically I kissed her. We shared a moment

Advertisement

in each others arms. I missed this little body so much! I love her so much. That scent and just her. Her being here with me.

Isi: I missed you

Me: I missed you too baby.

I pecked her lips once more.

She wheeled me to the house just when the maid came back.

Maid: Madam here is your pregnancy test.

Isiphile: Pregnancy test?

I took it.

Me: Umm Isi I think I might be pregnant.

Isi: No

Me: Yes

Isi: Is it Scars ?

Me: I'm not sure if I'm pregnant.

She seemed frustrated then paced up and down.

Isi: You know what let me help you take this test.

She helped me I peed on it and now we have to wait. She paced up and down looking all stressed. I looked at the test. Two lines are showing. The world seemed to come to an end for me.

What is happening? Why is this happening to me.

Me: It's positive.

Tears fell on Isi.

Isiphile: Why is this happening ? Why? Can't he stay out of our lives?

Me: Are you gonna leave me?

She seemed to be thinking

Isiphile: I love you X and this ...what's happened right now. I really don't know where I stand.

Me: I love you too Rato laka. You are the only one I'll ever see myself with. I don't see myself with anyone.

Rato: I'm afraid for you. You're in a wheelchair Xena. How will you take care of the baby? How will...no something has to be done.

Me: what can I possibly do?

Rato: The least we can do is get your legs back.

Me: Impossible.

Rato: nothing is impossible.

She made endless phone calls while I was busy checking other available doctors then writing their numbers down.

She dropped the call

Isi: No luck

Me: Let's just drop this.

"Ngqo!!" My mom entered.

Me: Hey mom.

Mom: Haybo Makoti.

Isi: Hi ma

Mom: What are you doing here?

Isi: ummm

She looked at me. .

Me: Mom I have to tell you something.

Mom: Yes

Me: Me and Isiphile are in a relationship.

Mom: As in friends?

Me: As lovers

Mom: No way you can't be with your brother's wife.

Me: I love her.

Isi's phone rings she went outside to answer it.

Mom: you can't be with her!!

Me: You won't tell me how to live my life. I'm done doing that.

Mom: Xena... You will listen to me I am your mother.

Me: You will respect my decision because I am old enough.

Thank you for your co operation

That felt so good ! It's something I've never ever done in my life. To make decisions of my own and be in control of my life.

I smiled seeing the disappointment in her face.

Isiphile walks in looking all happy

Isi: I've got doctor that will help you walk again!!!

She came and picked me up spinning me around screaming and I also screamed.

Isi: what the first thing you'll do when you're able to walk again.

Me: Go to the toilet

She chuckled

I looked at her laughing. She looks so beautiful and stunning.

So I've been attending physio sessions and my legs are kinda getting better. Thank God I went to the best doctor in South Africa I will have my legs again. I am so happy, we're so happy. I've decided to do something with my life finally. I'll do psychology, I know it may sound weird or what but that's what I wanna do. I wanna be people's ear, I wanna hear their problems that they can't talk with other people. I wanna be the reason they feel alive again. Challenges that I've faced in my life made me to chose this career path and I'm sure that this is for me. I was made to do this. I'm sure that this is my calling and I will make the best of it. I'm a little embarrassed that I'm changing courses like an underwater but I mean it's not my fault that it took me this long to figure myself out. I believe that everyone has a journey and along the journey we don't face the same challenges, we don't take the same time to finish it and each an every person has a different story to tell. I'm sure you might be asking sooo Xena ...what will happen to music? Honestly I still love music dearly but due to the circumstances I won't be doing it anymore. I'll do it part time mainly as a hobby, I'm not sure if I'm making sense. And then there is the issue of being pregnant

Isi extended her stay just to make sure I'm okay. It's quite annoying to be dependent to someone all the time. It's really

nerve wracking shame but the support and love I get from her is exceptional and comforting. She's the only person who makes sure that I'm on bed on time...I mean mom also did that before but now that she's here she does things extra and honestly I am so lucky to have someone who has undying love for me. Her divorce is finalized and she has to appear in court. I'll be there all the way supporting my future wife. I'm definitely wifing her as soon as I can. When I'm working

Advertisement

definitely my first paycheck will go to savings for the wedding.

Fast forward

10 months later

.
.br/.

I've given birth to a baby girl, her name is Isipho meaning Gift. The name came from Isiphile since she saw her as a blessing in her life. Of course she's a blessing to me too you know but to her it's extra special considering her condition of being infertile and all. It's really an amazing journey for us and I'm really thankful that she's in my life and we're raising Isipho together.

I'm doing my first year in UKZN and Isiphile is now divorced, she's spending most of her time here ever since we got together.

Good News!

Today is my last time going to physio to check if everything is going well with my legs.

And it seems like it's the last day I'm using a wheelchair!!!!

Honestly I'm not throwing away this wheelchair. I want to look at it and be like ... I was once in that and I'm a survivor. When I am going through difficult times I wanna look at it and be like. If I have survived that why can't I survive this one.

I'm currently driving to school. Remember the crashed Polo that I got when I was in matric?

Yeah so I fixed it and now it's all good. I have a job as a waitress to help my baby. I mean I won't be relying on Isiphile all the time. We now live in an apartment together. Uhm and the BMW ? Apparently mom sold it so yeah. I roll with the Polo now. It's still in good condition thou.

I parked on the parkings, Isi on my side. She works here as a temporary therapist.

Me: You good?

Isi: huh?

Me: Are you okay?

Isi: I was thinking How about I just move here permanently?

Me: Are you sure?

Isi: I mean I spend all my time here and you know it's like we're a family now so I was thinking of just moving in completely

Me: Okay I mean that makes sense.

Isi: Is it okay?

Me: Yeah absolutely ...you got something here.

I removed something in her eye.

Isi: what was it?

Me: some white stuff, don't worry I got you.

Isi: Nchoo

Me: You're my future wife so I gotta make sure you're well presented.

Isi: Xena I don't wanna get married again

Me: huh?

Isi: I won't be getting married again.

Me: Why? I mean we love each other.

Isi: I enjoy being free like this. Like marriage is just stressful. I just got out of marriage and doing it again will just be dreadful

Me: Can you make this clear, you don't want marriage or you don't want to marry me?

Isi: Marriage

Me: The only person we both know that you'll be marrying is me. So make it clear, you don't want to marry me?

Isi: babe it's not that.

Me: Then what is it?

Isi: honestly I am afraid.

Me: of what? We've been through a lot together. We love each other deeply and we both know it Rato what do you mean when you say you don't wanna get married? It's obvious moss you don't wanna get married to me.

She keeps quiet

Me: Rato?

Isiphile: Okay answer me this. Have you ever seen anyone marrying the same gender in your community?

68

Me: So you wanna tell me that you're feeling insecure because of that? Isi: Um It's not normal.

Me: Babe fuck what what the world thinks what matters is that we love each other and nothing will hinder our happiness. For what I've known is I've been living to people's expectations and I'm done with that life. The only person that matters is me. I don't give a fuck of what other people say and I know that you've been through the same thing so baby please stop thinking about people and think about yourself just once. You can just have a thought on this, I don't wanna be forcing you to something and we won't just get into marriage now. You know. I personally still have to be ready to so my baby take your time and give a thought on this.

I kissed her hand repeatedly then pecked her lips.

Me: I love you She smiled Isi: I love you too Xena.

We smiled at each other then after sometime I had to class.

Narrated

Xena and Isiphile dated for long time after that.

Scar got a life sentence in jail and they never told him about the child. Mandla and Fred stopped being gangsters and continued with their studies of being doctors.

Xena's biological parents have always been supportive of what she does expect the father. He was always too busy for his children. Xena's foster parents (the ones that raised her) finally accepted their relationship and fully support them where they can. They stopped being pastors and doing weird things like spraying doom on people. Now they are ordinary people who go to church like everyone does and have repented. They are not as rich as they were before which is quite a new thing for them but getting normal as time goes. Caleb and Liam have graduated and now Caleb is a teacher and Liam opened a company since he has a business degree.

Linda ended up being a prostitute since there were no other ways she saw to make money.

Aaron was killed by Scar. Aaron's friends repented and now they live a holy life. Jayden

, One of Aaron's friends is now a pastor.

Shawn and Xena are still on each others throat in a sibling way but they have each others backs when they need help. Sizwe is in an abusive relationship with Ayanda, they are officially married and it happened that Ayanda was impregnated by someone else but Sizwe still doesn't know even today, technically he is raising someone's child . The child is now 4 years old.

Xena and Isiphile finally got married as weird as it is to marry someone the same gender.

They are now living in one of the prestigious homes in Pietermaritzburg, KZN and they have 5 kids which they adopted and one which is their biological, Isipho

Today marks the day Xena is graduating with her second degree in psychology. And already has three job interviews

XENA

I watched Isiphile walking up the stairs to take her Master's degree. She decided to go to school and do an additional degree and as for me?

Professor: Xena Kabelo Mlanjana Daniels with distinction in Psychology!!

I walked to the stage proudly then got capped by the Vice chancellor. I had an opportunity to do a speech, everyone had to do a speech. Guess what? Xena didn't write hers.

I didn't prepare anything...it's like homework. I recalled the day in Matric when I didn't do homework and only Aaron did it. We were chased outside without hesitation. My thought that day was...why do they give us homework? I mean we already know what she taught us.

Just as I am standing here knowing exactly what I wanna say.

I smiled proudly

Me: I would first like to extend a warm welcome to my lectures, wish the struggle between lecturer and lecture still continues (crowd laughs), my classmates, sending greetings to my family, hello mama, and my other mom, hi dad and my other dad (the crowd laughed), to friends and my lovely beautiful wife, Isiphile Mlanjana. I don't know where to start showing gratitude, I'm really excited and happy to be standing here today. Four years ago I didn't know that I would be standing here. If someone told me that I will graduate one day, I would tell them that that's impossible. Believe it or not, I changed my courses thrice. First I did Medicine heyyyyy I was failing dismally. Have you ever had a 6% on a test? Ask me I know the pain. Apart from me not liking the course I was doing, I was going through a tough patch then ummm I was gang raped. This is something I never talk about, it's actually my first time talking about this in public but anyway I'll go ahead. Ummm so One of my best friends was part of the gang, after that, I wasn't myself. I lost it the most when my mother didn't believe that I was raped by my best friend who she loved dearly. And I think that that's why a lot of people don't wanna talk about it. That's why victims die in silence. The way people judge you, taking the rapist side. The way people still talk about "no you can't wear that" I mean What The Actual fuck!!! That is the mentality that makes this thing continue, women are getting lost everyday, they are killed

stabbed and brutally murdered! I don't know how many posts I share a day of a missing woman and we still have those assumptions of no maybe she doesn't want to be found. When she's raped, "no she asked for it" . When a particular person did that to me it killed me honestly but I had to make peace with it and forgive.... So as I was saying I was forced to do a course I didn't like and that alone affected me badly. I was constantly sad. I used to cut myself to feel better, got involved in drugs. I was a mess. I didn't want to talk about it. I was scared of what people may think about me. I was scared of how the community may respond. I was scared of the questions people may ask. I was scared of the reactions, the insults. People asking "what were you wearing?"I developed anger towards everything but I tried to conceal it. Until someone (looking at Rato) came to my rescue. She helped me through my journey. Well this is not for a show but my life events is what made me choose this career path. I didn't know from the start that this is what I am meant to do but I made it to the top. With a distinction at that.

A little advice I'd like to give don't let your failure determine your future. Pick yourself up, dust yourself up and figure yourself out. When people try to change you and control you. Don't let that happen for the sake of keeping up to their expectations. Don't stay in situations where you don't feel happy for the sake of other people's happiness. One more thing

I've learnt the past years is that I should love myself first in order to love another person. I should do what makes me happy because life is too short to be making stupid decisions.

I want to take this moment and thank you my family for pulling through, thank you so much for your undying support. Thank you so much for taking up my shit, excuse me for my language. But thank you guys for raising me to this beautiful woman that I am today. To my wife, my life support, my first baby. You are a true definition of a partner and I don't know what I would be without you. You showed another versions of love that I didn't know, you showed me what real love is, you showed me that love is about support, commitment, compromise and mostly about loving each other to the fullest and I am so grateful to have you in my life. Please remember that I love you. I thank you. With that I left the stage.

.....**The End**.....

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>